

THE ANNALS *of* STATISTICS

AN OFFICIAL JOURNAL OF THE
INSTITUTE OF MATHEMATICAL STATISTICS

Articles

Special Section of Memorial Articles for Willem van Zwet

- Preface: Section of memorial articles for Willem van Zwet
RICHARD J. SAMWORTH AND MING YUAN 2431
- Willem van Zwet's contributions to the profession
NICHOLAS I. FISHER AND ADRIAN F. M. SMITH 2432
- Willem van Zwet's research
PETER BICKEL, MARTA FIOCCO, MATHISCA DE GUNST AND FRIEDRICH GÖTZE 2439
- Willem van Zwet, teacher and thesis advisor
SARA VAN DE GEER AND CHRIS A. J. KLAASSEN 2448

Regular Articles

- Optimal rates for independence testing via U -statistic permutation tests
THOMAS B. BERRETT, IOANNIS KONTOYIANNIS AND RICHARD J. SAMWORTH 2457
- Variable selection consistency of Gaussian process regression
SHENG JIANG AND SURYA T. TOKDAR 2491
- Optimality of spectral clustering in the Gaussian mixture model
MATTHIAS LÖFFLER, ANDERSON Y. ZHANG AND HARRISON H. ZHOU 2506
- Adaptive estimation of multivariate piecewise polynomials and bounded variation functions by optimal decision trees
SABYASACHI CHATTERJEE AND SUBHAJIT GOSWAMI 2531
- Rank-based estimation under asymptotic dependence and independence, with applications to spatial extremes MICHAËL LALANCETTE,
SEBASTIAN ENGELKE AND STANISLAV VOLGUSHEV 2552
- Estimation of smooth functionals in normal models: Bias reduction and asymptotic efficiency VLADIMIR KOLTCHINSKII AND MAYYA ZHILOVA 2577
- Additive regression for non-Euclidean responses and predictors
JEONG MIN JEON, BYEONG U. PARK AND INGRID VAN KEILEGOM 2611
- Set structured global empirical risk minimizers are rate optimal in general dimensions
QIYANG HAN 2642
- Empirical tail copulas for functional data ... JOHN H. J. EINMAHL AND JOHAN SEGERS 2672
- Inference for a two-stage enrichment design
ZHANTAO LIN, NANCY FLOURNOY AND WILLIAM F. ROSENBERGER 2697
- Existence and uniqueness of the Kronecker covariance MLE
MATHIAS DRTON, SATOSHI KURIKI AND PETER HOFF 2721
- Prediction bounds for higher order total variation regularized least squares
FRANCESCO ORTELLI AND SARA VAN DE GEER 2755
- Reconciling the Gaussian and Whittle likelihood with an application to estimation in the frequency domain SUHASINI SUBBA RAO AND JUNHO YANG 2774
- Integrative methods for post-selection inference under convex constraints
SNIGDHA PANIGRAHI, JONATHAN TAYLOR AND ASAF WEINSTEIN 2803
- The cost of privacy: Optimal rates of convergence for parameter estimation with differential privacy T. TONY CAI, YICHEN WANG AND LINJUN ZHANG 2825

continued

THE ANNALS *of* STATISTICS

AN OFFICIAL JOURNAL OF THE
INSTITUTE OF MATHEMATICAL STATISTICS

Articles—*Continued from front cover*

- Distributed statistical inference for massive data . . . SONG XI CHEN AND LIUHUA PENG 2851
Construction of mixed orthogonal arrays with high strength
SHANQI PANG, JING WANG, DENNIS K. J. LIN AND MIN-QIAN LIU 2870
Foundations of structural causal models with cycles and latent variables
STEPHAN BONGERS, PATRICK FORRÉ, JONAS PETERS AND JORIS M. MOOIJ 2885
Measuring dependence in the Wasserstein distance for Bayesian nonparametric models
MARTA CATALANO, ANTONIO LIJOI AND IGOR PRÜNSTER 2916
Bridging convex and nonconvex optimization in robust PCA: Noise, outliers and missing
data YUXIN CHEN, JIANQING FAN, CONG MA AND YULING YAN 2948
Efficiency of delayed-acceptance random walk Metropolis algorithms
CHRIS SHERLOCK, ALEXANDRE H. THIERY AND ANDREW GOLIGHTLY 2972
Semiparametric optimal estimation with nonignorable nonresponse data
KOSUKE MORIKAWA AND JAE KWANG KIM 2991
Two-level parallel flats designs CHUNYAN WANG AND ROBERT W. MEE 3015

THE ANNALS OF STATISTICS

Vol. 49, No. 5, pp. 2431–3041 October 2021

INSTITUTE OF MATHEMATICAL STATISTICS

(Organized September 12, 1935)

The purpose of the Institute is to foster the development and dissemination of the theory and applications of statistics and probability.

IMS OFFICERS

President: Regina Y. Liu, Department of Statistics, Rutgers University, Piscataway, New Jersey 08854-8019, USA

President-Elect: Krzysztof Burdzy, Department of Mathematics, University of Washington, Seattle, Washington 98195-4350, USA

Past President: Susan Murphy, Department of Statistics, Harvard University, Cambridge, Massachusetts 02138-2901, USA

Executive Secretary: Edsel Peña, Department of Statistics, University of South Carolina, Columbia, South Carolina 29208-001, USA

Treasurer: Zhengjun Zhang, Department of Statistics, University of Wisconsin, Madison, Wisconsin 53706-1510, USA

Program Secretary: Ming Yuan, Department of Statistics, Columbia University, New York, NY 10027-5927, USA

IMS EDITORS

The Annals of Statistics. *Editors:* Richard J. Samworth, Statistical Laboratory, Centre for Mathematical Sciences, University of Cambridge, Cambridge, CB3 0WB, UK. Ming Yuan, Department of Statistics, Columbia University, New York, NY 10027, USA

The Annals of Applied Statistics. *Editor-in-Chief:* Karen Kafadar, Department of Statistics, University of Virginia, Heidelberg Institute for Theoretical Studies, Charlottesville, VA 22904-4135, USA

The Annals of Probability. *Editors:* Alice Guionnet, Unité de Mathématiques Pures et Appliquées, ENS de Lyon, Lyon, France. Christophe Garban, Institut Camille Jordan, Université Claude Bernard Lyon 1, 69622 Villeurbanne, France

The Annals of Applied Probability. *Editors:* François Delarue, Laboratoire J. A. Dieudonné, Université de Nice Sophia-Antipolis, France-06108 Nice Cedex 2. Peter Friz, Institut für Mathematik, Technische Universität Berlin, 10623 Berlin, Germany and Weierstrass-Institut für Angewandte Analysis und Stochastik, 10117 Berlin, Germany

Statistical Science. *Editor:* Sonia Petrone, Department of Decision Sciences, Università Bocconi, 20100 Milano MI, Italy

The IMS Bulletin. *Editor:* Vlada Limic, UMR 7501 de l'Université de Strasbourg et du CNRS, 7 rue René Descartes, 67084 Strasbourg Cedex, France

The Annals of Statistics [ISSN 0090-5364 (print); ISSN 2168-8966 (online)], Volume 49, Number 5, October 2021. Published bimonthly by the Institute of Mathematical Statistics, 9760 Smith Road, Waite Hill, Ohio 44094, USA. Periodicals postage paid at Cleveland, Ohio, and at additional mailing offices.

POSTMASTER: Send address changes to *The Annals of Statistics*, Institute of Mathematical Statistics, Dues and Subscriptions Office, PO Box 729, Middletown, Maryland 21769, USA.

PREFACE: SECTION OF MEMORIAL ARTICLES FOR WILLEM VAN ZWET

BY RICHARD J. SAMWORTH^{1,??} AND MING YUAN^{??}

¹*Statistical Laboratory, University of Cambridge, ??*r.samworth@statslab.cam.ac.uk

²*Department of Statistics, Columbia University, ??*ming.yuan@columbia.edu

REFERENCES

- BICKEL, P., FIOCCO, M., DE GUNST, M. and GÖTZE, F. (2021). Willem van Zwet's research. *Ann. Statist.* this issue.
- FISHER, N. I. and SMITH, A. F. M. (2021). Willem van Zwet's contributions to the profession. *Ann. Statist.* this issue.
- SAMWORTH, R. J. and YUAN, M. (2021). Supplement to "Preface: Section of memorial articles for Willem van Zwet." <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2112SUPPA>, <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2112SUPPB>
- VAN ZWET, W. R. (1999). No complaints so far. Speech given by the author on the occasion of his retirement as Professor of Mathematical Statistics at the University of Leiden. *Nieuw Arch. Wiskd.* (4) **17** 268–279. [MR1722868](#)
- VAN DE GEER, A. and KLAASSEN, C. A. J. (2021). Willem van Zwet, teacher and thesis advisor. *Ann. Statist.* this issue.

WILLEM VAN ZWET’S CONTRIBUTIONS TO THE PROFESSION

BY NICHOLAS I. FISHER^{1,??} AND ADRIAN F. M. SMITH^{2,??}

¹*School of Mathematics & Statistics, University of Sydney, ??Nicholas.Fisher@sydney.edu.au*

²*The Alan Turing Institute, ??InstituteDirector@turing.ac.uk*

Bill van Zwet’s contributions to his profession are, in their own way, comparable to his very substantial research, research supervision and teaching contributions. He had several leadership roles in professional societies, edited leading theoretical journals, started up or revived important conference series, founded a research center and played a huge role in providing colleagues in Central and Eastern Europe access to the western world of probability and statistics. And to each of these several activities, he brought far-sightedness, energy and wit, qualities that shone through when he was interviewed about what he’d done (*Statist. Sci.* **24** (2009) 87–115). In fact, because Bill provided a wealth of detail in “the interview,” this article focuses more on the recollections of some of the people with whom he interacted.

REFERENCES

- BERAN, R. J. and FISHER, N. I. (2009). An evening spent with Bill van Zwet. *Statist. Sci.* **24** 87–115. [MR2561130](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/08-STS261>
- DEN HOLLANDER, W. T. F., SENDEN, W. J. M. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (2008). EURANDOM: A decade of European stochastics. *Stat. Neerl.* **62** 256–265. [MR2526272](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9574.2008.00398.x>
- VAN DER VAART, A. (2020). Obituary: Willem van Zwet. *IMS Bulletin* **49** 12–13.

WILLEM VAN ZWET'S RESEARCH

BY PETER BICKEL^{1,??}, MARTA FIOCCO^{2,??}, MATHISCA DE GUNST^{3,??} AND
FRIEDRICH GÖTZE^{4,??}

¹Department of Statistics, University of California, Berkeley, ?? bickel.peter@gmail.com

²Mathematical Institute, Leiden University, ?? m.fiocco@math.leidenuniv.nl

³Department of Mathematics, Vrije Universiteit Amsterdam, ?? m.c.m.de.gunst@vu.nl

⁴Faculty of Mathematics, University of Bielefeld, ?? goetze@math.uni-bielefeld.de

Willem van Zwet made deep and influential contributions to probability and statistics, which we review in this paper. Bickel and Götze collaborated with him on his major contributions to higher order asymptotics of nonlinear statistics and on resampling and the bootstrap. We relate this work to his remarkable development of the properties of the Hoeffding expansion for symmetric statistics as well as Fourier analytic tools. Fiocco and De Gunst were his students. We describe how in their theses and subsequent papers with him they developed statistical inference in two subtle stochastic models, the contact process and cell population development under a plausible regime. We also touch on his solutions of intriguing problems not related directly to his main interests.

REFERENCES

- [1] ALBERS, W., BICKEL, P. J. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1976). Asymptotic expansions for the power of distribution free tests in the one-sample problem. *Ann. Statist.* **4** 108–156. [MR0391373](#)
- [2] BENTKUS, V., GÖTZE, F. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1997). An Edgeworth expansion for symmetric statistics. *Ann. Statist.* **25** 851–896. [MR1439326](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1031833676>
- [3] BHATTACHARYA, R. N. and RAO, R. R. (2010). *Normal Approximation and Asymptotic Expansions. Classics in Applied Mathematics* **64**. SIAM, Philadelphia, PA. Updated reprint of the 1986 edition [MR0855460], corrected edition of the 1976 original [MR0436272]. [MR3396213](#) <https://doi.org/10.1137/1.9780898719895.ch1>
- [4] BICKEL, P. J. (1974). Edgeworth expansions in non parametric statistics. *Ann. Statist.* **2** 1–20. [MR0350952](#)
- [5] BICKEL, P. J., GÖTZE, F. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1986). The Edgeworth expansion for U -statistics of degree two. *Ann. Statist.* **14** 1463–1484. [MR0868312](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176350170>
- [6] BICKEL, P. J., GÖTZE, F. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1997). Resampling fewer than n observations: Gains, losses, and remedies for losses. *Statist. Sinica* **7** 1–31. [MR1441142](#)
- [7] BICKEL, P. J. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1978). Asymptotic expansions for the power of distribution free tests in the two-sample problem. *Ann. Statist.* **6** 937–1004. [MR0499567](#)
- [8] BICKEL, P. J. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1980). On a theorem of Hoeffding. In *Asymptotic Theory of Statistical Tests and Estimation (Proc. Adv. Internat. Sympos., Univ. North Carolina, Chapel Hill, N.C., 1979)* 307–324. Academic Press, New York. [MR0571346](#)
- [9] BLOZNELIS, M. and GÖTZE, F. (2021). Edgeworth approximations for distributions of symmetric statistics. Available at <https://arxiv.org/abs/2102.03589>.
- [10] CHIBISOV, D. M. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1984). On the Edgeworth expansion for the logarithm of the likelihood ratio. I. *Teor. Veroyatn. Primen.* **29** 417–439. [MR0761128](#)
- [11] CHIBISOV, D. M. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1984). On the Edgeworth expansion for the logarithm of the likelihood ratio. II. In *Asymptotic Statistics, 2 (Kutná Hora, 1983)* 451–461. Elsevier, Amsterdam. [MR0785424](#)
- [12] CHRISTENSEN, J. P. R. and RESSEL, P. (1981). A probabilistic characterisation of negative definite and completely alternating functions. *Z. Wahrsch. Verw. Gebiete* **57** 407–417. [MR0629534](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00534832>

- [13] DE GUNST, M. C. M. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1992). A non-Markovian model for cell population growth: Speed of convergence and central limit theorem. *Stochastic Process. Appl.* **41** 297–324. [MR1164182](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/0304-4149\(92\)90129-E](https://doi.org/10.1016/0304-4149(92)90129-E)
- [14] DE GUNST, M. C. M. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1993). A non-Markovian model for cell population growth: Tail behavior and duration of the growth process. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* **3** 1112–1144. [MR1241037](#)
- [15] DI BUCCHIANICO, A., HUŠKOVÁ, M., KLÁŠTERECKÝ, P. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (2004). Performance of control charts for specific alternative hypotheses. In *COMPSTAT 2004—Proceedings in Computational Statistics* 903–910. Physica, Heidelberg. [MR2173090](#)
- [16] DIKS, C., VAN ZWET, W. R., TAKENS, F. and DEGOEDE, J. (1996). Detecting differences between delay vector distributions. *Phys. Rev. E* (3) **53** 2169–2176. [MR1388210](#) <https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevE.53.2169>
- [17] FIOCCO, M. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1998). On the shape theorem for the supercritical contact process. *Prague Stochastics*. Union of Czech Mathematicians and Physicists, Prague.
- [18] FIOCCO, M. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (2000). Statistics for the contact process. In *Symposium in Honour of Ole E. Barndorff-Nielsen (Aarhus, 2000)*. *Memoirs* **16** 102–109. Univ. Aarhus, Aarhus. [MR1985915](#)
- [19] FIOCCO, M. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (2003). Decaying correlations for the supercritical contact process conditioned on survival. *Bernoulli* **9** 763–781. [MR2047685](#) <https://doi.org/10.3150/bj/1066418877>
- [20] FIOCCO, M. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (2003). Parameter estimation for the supercritical contact process. *Bernoulli* **9** 1071–1092. [MR2046818](#) <https://doi.org/10.3150/bj/1072215201>
- [21] FIOCCO, M. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (2004). Maximum likelihood estimation for the contact process. In *A Festschrift for Herman Rubin. Institute of Mathematical Statistics Lecture Notes—Monograph Series* **45** 309–318. IMS, Beachwood, OH. [MR2126906](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/lnms/1196285399>
- [22] FIOCCO, M. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (2006). Maximum likelihood for the fully observed contact process. *J. Comput. Appl. Math.* **186** 117–129. [MR2190301](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.cam.2005.01.037>
- [23] GÖTZE, F. (1981). On Edgeworth expansions in Banach spaces. *Ann. Probab.* **9** 852–859. [MR0628877](#)
- [24] GÖTZE, F. (1993). *IMS Bulletin*. Special Invited Lecture in Annual joint IMS/ASA meeting on Statistics and Probability, San Francisco, Aug. 1993.
- [25] GÖTZE, F. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (2006). An expansion for a discrete non-lattice distribution. In *Frontiers in Statistics* 257–274. Imp. Coll. Press, London. [MR2326005](#) https://doi.org/10.1142/9781860948886_0012
- [26] GUNST, M. D., HARKES, P., VAL, J., ZWET, W. R. and LIBBENGA, K. (1990). Modelling the growth of a batch culture of plant cells: A corpuscular approach. *Enzyme Microb. Technol.* **12** 61–71. [https://doi.org/10.1016/0141-0229\(90\)90182-P](https://doi.org/10.1016/0141-0229(90)90182-P)
- [27] HÁJEK, J. (1968). Asymptotic normality of simple linear rank statistics under alternatives. *Ann. Math. Stat.* **39** 325–346. [MR0222988](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aoms/1177698394>
- [28] HELMERS, R. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1982). The Berry–Esseen bound for U -statistics. In *Statistical Decision Theory and Related Topics, III, Vol. 1 (West Lafayette, Ind., 1981)* 497–512. Academic Press, New York. [MR0705302](#)
- [29] HODGES, J. L. JR. and LEHMANN, E. L. (1970). Deficiency. *Ann. Math. Stat.* **41** 783–801. [MR0272092](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aoms/1177696959>
- [30] HOEFFDING, W. (1948). A class of statistics with asymptotically normal distribution. *Ann. Math. Stat.* **19** 293–325. [MR0026294](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aoms/1177730196>
- [31] HOEFFDING, W. (1956). On the distribution of the number of successes in independent trials. *Ann. Math. Stat.* **27** 713–721. [MR0080391](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aoms/1177728178>
- [32] LITVAK, N. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (2004). On the minimal travel time needed to collect n items on a circle. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* **14** 881–902. [MR2052907](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/105051604000000152>
- [33] MASON, D. M. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1987). A refinement of the KMT inequality for the uniform empirical process. *Ann. Probab.* **15** 871–884. [MR0893903](#)
- [34] MASON, D. M. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1987). A note on the strong approximation to the renewal process. *Publ. Inst. Stat. Univ. Paris* **32** 81–91. [MR0899236](#)
- [35] MISES, R. V. (1947). On the asymptotic distribution of differentiable statistical functions. *Ann. Math. Stat.* **18** 309–348. [MR0022330](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aoms/1177730385>
- [36] PFANZAGL, J. (1979). First order efficiency implies second order efficiency. In *Contributions to Statistics* 167–196. Reidel, Dordrecht, MA. [MR0561268](#)
- [37] PFANZAGL, J. (1982). *Contributions to a General Asymptotic Statistical Theory. Lecture Notes in Statistics* **13**. Springer, New York. With the assistance of W. Wefelmeyer. [MR0675954](#)
- [38] POLITIS, D. N. and ROMANO, J. P. (1994). Large sample confidence regions based on subsamples under minimal assumptions. *Ann. Statist.* **22** 2031–2050. [MR1329181](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176325770>

- [39] PUTTER, H. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1996). Resampling: Consistency of substitution estimators. *Ann. Statist.* **24** 2297–2318. [MR1425955](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1032181156>
- [40] PUTTER, H. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (1998). Empirical Edgeworth expansions for symmetric statistics. *Ann. Statist.* **26** 1540–1569. [MR1647697](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1024691253>
- [41] PYKE, R. and VAN ZWET, W. R. (2004). Weak convergence results for the Kakutani interval splitting procedure. *Ann. Probab.* **32** 380–423. [MR2040787](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aop/1078415840>
- [42] RÉNYI, A. (1970). *Probability Theory*. North-Holland, Amsterdam. Translated by László Vekerdí, North-Holland Series in Applied Mathematics and Mechanics, Vol. 10. [MR0315747](#)
- [43] VAN ZWET, W. R. (1964). *Convex Transformations of Random Variables*. *Mathematical Centre Tracts* **7**. Mathematisch Centrum, Amsterdam. [MR0176511](#)
- [44] VAN ZWET, W. R. (1977). Asymptotic expansions for the distribution functions of linear combinations of order statistics. In *Statistical Decision Theory and Related Topics, II (Proc. Sympos., Purdue Univ., Lafayette, Ind., 1976)* 421–437. [MR0438586](#)
- [45] VAN ZWET, W. R. (1978). A proof of Kakutani’s conjecture on random subdivision of longest intervals. *Ann. Probab.* **6** 133–137. [MR0478307](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aop/1176995617>
- [46] VAN ZWET, W. R. (1979). The Edgeworth expansion for linear combinations of uniform order statistics. In *Proceedings of the Second Prague Symposium on Asymptotic Statistics (Hradec Králové, 1978)* 93–101. North-Holland, Amsterdam. [MR0571178](#)
- [47] VAN ZWET, W. R. (1980). A strong law for linear functions of order statistics. *Ann. Probab.* **8** 986–990. [MR0586781](#)
- [48] VAN ZWET, W. R. (1982). On the Edgeworth expansion for the simple linear rank statistic. In *Nonparametric Statistical Inference, Vol. I, II (Budapest, 1980)*. *Colloquia Mathematica Societatis János Bolyai* **32** 889–909. North-Holland, Amsterdam. [MR0719749](#)
- [49] VAN ZWET, W. R. (1984). A Berry–Esseen bound for symmetric statistics. *Z. Wahrsch. Verw. Gebiete* **66** 425–440. [MR0751580](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00533707>
- [50] VAN ZWET, W. R. (1994). The asymptotic distribution of point charges on a conducting sphere. In *Statistical Decision Theory and Related Topics, V (West Lafayette, IN, 1992)* 427–430. Springer, New York. [MR1286318](#)
- [51] VAN ZWET, W. R. and OOSTERHOFF, J. (1967). On the combination of independent test statistics. *Ann. Math. Stat.* **38** 659–680. [MR0216645](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aoms/1177698861>

WILLEM VAN ZWET, TEACHER AND THESIS ADVISOR

EDITED BY SARA VAN DE GEER^{1,??} AND CHRIS A. J. KLAASSEN^{2,??}

¹*Department of Mathematics, ETH Zürich, ?? sara.vandegeer@stat.math.ethz.ch*

²*Korteweg-de Vries Institute for Mathematics, University of Amsterdam, ?? c.a.j.klaassen@uva.nl*

Willem van Zwet was supervisor of sixteen PhD students. All of them pursued academic careers and most of them became full professor. Below are some stories of PhD students Wim Albers, Cees Diks, Ronald Does, Marta Fiocco, Sara van de Geer, Mathisca de Gunst, Chris Klaassen, Hein Putter, Aad van der Vaart, Marten Wegkamp and Martien van Zuijlen with in addition a contribution by Nelly Litvak who was guided by Willem after her PhD.

OPTIMAL RATES FOR INDEPENDENCE TESTING VIA U -STATISTIC PERMUTATION TESTS

BY THOMAS B. BERRETT^{1,??}, IOANNIS KONTOYIANNIS^{2,*} AND
 RICHARD J. SAMWORTH^{2,†}

¹Department of Statistics, University of Warwick, ^{??}tom.berrett@warwick.ac.uk

²Statistical Laboratory, Centre for Mathematical Sciences, ^{*}yiannis@maths.cam.ac.uk, [†]r.samworth@statslab.cam.ac.uk

We study the problem of independence testing given independent and identically distributed pairs taking values in a σ -finite, separable measure space. Defining a natural measure of dependence $D(f)$ as the squared L^2 -distance between a joint density f and the product of its marginals, we first show that there is no valid test of independence that is uniformly consistent against alternatives of the form $\{f : D(f) \geq \rho^2\}$. We therefore restrict attention to alternatives that impose additional Sobolev-type smoothness constraints, and define a permutation test based on a basis expansion and a U -statistic estimator of $D(f)$ that we prove is minimax optimal in terms of its separation rates in many instances. Finally, for the case of a Fourier basis on $[0, 1]^2$, we provide an approximation to the power function that offers several additional insights. Our methodology is implemented in the R package USP.

REFERENCES

- ALBERT, M. (2015). Tests of independence by bootstrap and permutation: An asymptotic and non-asymptotic study. Application to neurosciences. Ph.D. thesis. Available at <https://tel.archives-ouvertes.fr/tel-01274647/file/2015NICE4079.pdf>.
- ALBERT, M., BOURET, Y., FROMONT, M. and REYNAUD-BOURET, P. (2015). Bootstrap and permutation tests of independence for point processes. *Ann. Statist.* **43** 2537–2564. MR3405603 <https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AOS1351>
- ANTOCH, J. and HUŠKOVÁ, M. (2001). Permutation tests in change point analysis. *Statist. Probab. Lett.* **53** 37–46. MR1843339 [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0167-7152\(01\)00009-8](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0167-7152(01)00009-8)
- BERRETT, T. B., GROSE, D. J. and SAMWORTH, R. J. (2018). IndepTest: Nonparametric independence tests based on entropy estimation. *R Package version 0.2.0*. Available at <https://cran.r-project.org/web/packages/IndepTest/index.html>.
- BERRETT, T. B., KONTOYIANNIS, I. and SAMWORTH, R. J. (2020). USP: U -statistic permutation tests of independence for all data types, with improvement on Pearson’s chi-squared test for discrete data. *R package version 0.1.0*. Available at <https://cran.r-project.org/web/packages/USP/index.html>.
- BERRETT, T. B., KONTOYIANNIS, I. and SAMWORTH, R. J. (2021). Supplement to “Optimal rates for independence testing via U -statistic permutation tests.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/20-AOS2041SUPP>
- BERRETT, T. B. and SAMWORTH, R. J. (2019). Nonparametric independence testing via mutual information. *Biometrika* **106** 547–566. MR3992389 <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asz024>
- BERRETT, T. B., WANG, Y., BARBER, R. F. and SAMWORTH, R. J. (2020). The conditional permutation test for independence while controlling for confounders. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **82** 175–197. MR4060981
- BOUCHERON, S., LUGOSI, G. and MASSART, P. (2013). *Concentration Inequalities: A Nonasymptotic Theory of Independence*. Oxford Univ. Press, Oxford. With a foreword by Michel Ledoux. MR3185193 <https://doi.org/10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199535255.001.0001>
- CHUNG, E. and ROMANO, J. P. (2013). Exact and asymptotically robust permutation tests. *Ann. Statist.* **41** 484–507. MR3099111 <https://doi.org/10.1214/13-AOS1090>
- CHUNG, E. and ROMANO, J. P. (2016). Asymptotically valid and exact permutation tests based on two-sample U -statistics. *J. Statist. Plann. Inference* **168** 97–105. MR3412224 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jspi.2015.07.004>

MSC2020 subject classifications. 62G09, 62G10.

Key words and phrases. Independence testing, permutation tests, minimax separation rates, U -statistics, Stein’s method.

- DE JONG, P. (1990). A central limit theorem for generalized multilinear forms. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **34** 275–289. [MR1073110](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/0047-259X\(90\)90040-O](https://doi.org/10.1016/0047-259X(90)90040-O)
- DEB, N. and SEN, B. (2019). Multivariate rank-based distribution-free nonparametric testing using measure transportation. Available at [arXiv:1909.08733](#).
- DIAKONIKOLAS, I. and KANE, D. M. (2016). A new approach for testing properties of discrete distributions. In *57th Annual IEEE Symposium on Foundations of Computer Science—FOCS 2016* 685–694. IEEE Comput. Soc., Los Alamitos, CA. [MR3631031](#)
- DÖBLER, C. and PECCATI, G. (2017). Quantitative de Jong theorems in any dimension. *Electron. J. Probab.* **22** Paper No. 2. [MR3613695](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/16-EJP19>
- DÖBLER, C. and PECCATI, G. (2019). Quantitative CLTs for symmetric U -statistics using contractions. *Electron. J. Probab.* **24** Paper No. 5. [MR3916325](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/19-EJP264>
- ERMAKOV, M. S. (1990). Asymptotically minimax tests for nonparametric hypotheses concerning the distribution density. *J. Sov. Math.* **52** 2891–2898.
- FISHER, R. A. (1935). *The Design of Experiments*, 1st ed. Oliver & Boyd, Edinburgh.
- GABRYS, R. and KOKOSZKA, P. (2007). Portmanteau test of independence for functional observations. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **102** 1338–1348. [MR2412554](#) <https://doi.org/10.1198/016214507000001111>
- GRETTON, A., BOUSQUET, O., SMOLA, A. and SCHÖLKOPF, B. (2005). Measuring statistical dependence with Hilbert–Schmidt norms. In *Algorithmic Learning Theory. Lecture Notes in Computer Science* **3734** 63–77. Springer, Berlin. [MR2255909](#) https://doi.org/10.1007/11564089_7
- HALL, P. (1984). Central limit theorem for integrated square error of multivariate nonparametric density estimators. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **14** 1–16. [MR0734096](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/0047-259X\(84\)90044-7](https://doi.org/10.1016/0047-259X(84)90044-7)
- HELLER, R., HELLER, Y., KAUFMAN, S., BRILL, B. and GORFINE, M. (2016). Consistent distribution-free K -sample and independence tests for univariate random variables. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **17** Paper No. 29. [MR3491123](#)
- HOEFFDING, W. (1948). A non-parametric test of independence. *Ann. Math. Stat.* **19** 546–557. [MR0029139](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aoms/1177730150>
- HOFERT, M., KOJADINOVIC, I., MÄCHLER, M. and YAN, J. (2017). copula: Multivariate dependence with copulas. *R Package version 0.999-18*. Available at <https://cran.r-project.org/web/packages/copula/index.html>.
- INGSTER, Y. I. (1989). Asymptotic minimax testing of independence hypothesis. *J. Sov. Math.* **44** 466–476.
- INGSTER, Y. I. (1996). Minimax testing of the hypothesis of independence for ellipsoids in ℓ_p . *J. Math. Sci.* **81** 2406–2420.
- JANSSSEN, A. (2000). Global power functions of goodness of fit tests. *Ann. Statist.* **28** 239–253. [MR1762910](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1016120371>
- KAHANE, J.-P. (1997). A century of interplay between Taylor series, Fourier series and Brownian motion. *Bull. Lond. Math. Soc.* **29** 257–279. [MR1435557](#) <https://doi.org/10.1112/S0024609396002913>
- KENDALL, M. G. (1938). A new measure of rank correlation. *Biometrika* **30** 81–89.
- KIM, I., BALAKRISHNAN, S. and WASSERMAN, L. (2020). Minimax optimality of permutation tests. Available at <https://arxiv.org/abs/2003.13208>.
- KOJADINOVIC, I. and HOLMES, M. (2009). Tests of independence among continuous random vectors based on Cramér–von Mises functionals of the empirical copula process. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **100** 1137–1154. [MR2508377](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2008.10.013>
- LAURENT, B. (1996). Efficient estimation of integral functionals of a density. *Ann. Statist.* **24** 659–681. [MR1394981](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1032894458>
- LEHMANN, E. L. and ROMANO, J. P. (2005). *Testing Statistical Hypotheses*, 3rd ed. Springer Texts in Statistics. Springer, New York. [MR2135927](#)
- LI, T. and YUAN, M. (2019). On the optimality of Gaussian kernel based nonparametric tests against smooth alternatives. Available at [arXiv:1909.03302](#).
- MEYNAOUI, A., ALBERT, M., LAURENT, B. and MARREL, A. (2019). Adaptive test of independence based on HSIC measures. Available at [arXiv:1902.06441](#).
- NGUYEN, D. and EISENSTEIN, J. (2017). A kernel independence test for geographical language variation. *Comput. Linguist.* **43** 567–592. [MR3708620](#) https://doi.org/10.1162/COLI_a_00293
- PATEFIELD, W. M. (1981). Algorithm AS159. An efficient method of generating $r \times c$ tables with given row and column totals. *J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. C* **30** 91–97.
- PEARSON, K. (1920). Notes on the history of correlation. *Biometrika* **13** 25–45.
- PESARIN, F. and SALMASO, L. (2010). *Permutation Tests for Complex Data. Theory, Applications and Software*. Wiley, Chichester, UK.
- PFISTER, N. and PETERS, J. (2017). dHSIC: Independence testing via Hilbert Schmidt independence criterion. *R Package version 2.0*. <https://cran.r-project.org/web/packages/dHSIC/index.html>.
- PFISTER, N., BÜHLMANN, P., SCHÖLKOPF, B. and PETERS, J. (2018). Kernel-based tests for joint independence. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **80** 5–31. [MR3744710](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/rssb.12235>

- PITMAN, E. J. G. (1938). Significance tests which may be applied to samples from any populations: III. The analysis of variance test. *Biometrika* **29** 322–335.
- RESHEF, D. N., RESHEF, Y. A., FINUCANE, H. K., GROSSMAN, S. R., MCVEAN, G., TURNBAUGH, P. J., LANDER, E. S., MITZENMACHER, M. and SABETI, P. C. (2011). Detecting novel associations in large data sets. *Science* **334** 1518–1524.
- RINOTT, Y. and ROTAR, V. (1997). On coupling constructions and rates in the CLT for dependent summands with applications to the antivoter model and weighted U -statistics. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* **7** 1080–1105. [MR1484798 https://doi.org/10.1214/aoap/1043862425](https://doi.org/10.1214/aoap/1043862425)
- RIZZO, M. L. and SZEKELY, G. J. (2017). energy: E-statistics: Multivariate inference via the energy of data. *R Package version 1.7-2*. Available at: <https://cran.r-project.org/web/packages/energy/index.html>.
- ROMANO, J. P. (1989). Bootstrap and randomization tests of some nonparametric hypotheses. *Ann. Statist.* **17** 141–159. [MR0981441 https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176347007](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176347007)
- SEJDINOVIC, D., SRIPERUMBUDUR, B., GRETTON, A. and FUKUMIZU, K. (2013). Equivalence of distance-based and RKHS-based statistics in hypothesis testing. *Ann. Statist.* **41** 2263–2291. [MR3127866 https://doi.org/10.1214/13-AOS1140](https://doi.org/10.1214/13-AOS1140)
- SERFLING, R. J. (1980). *Approximation Theorems of Mathematical Statistics*. Wiley Series in Probability and Mathematical Statistics. Wiley, New York. [MR0595165](https://doi.org/10.1214/19-AOS1857)
- SHAH, R. D. and PETERS, J. (2020). The hardness of conditional independence testing and the generalised covariance measure. *Ann. Statist.* **48** 1514–1538. [MR4124333 https://doi.org/10.1214/19-AOS1857](https://doi.org/10.1214/19-AOS1857)
- SHI, H., DRTON, M. and HAN, F. (2020). Distribution-free consistent independence tests via center-outward ranks and signs. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* To appear. <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2020.1782223>
- SONG, L., SMOLA, A., GRETTON, A., BEDO, J. and BORGWARDT, K. (2012). Feature selection via dependence maximization. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **13** 1393–1434. [MR2930643](https://doi.org/10.1214/009053607000000505)
- SPEARMAN, C. (1904). The proof and measurement of association between two things. *Am. J. Psychol.* **15** 72–101.
- STEUER, R., KURTHS, J., DAUB, C. O., WEISE, J. and SELBIG, J. (2002). The mutual information: Detecting and evaluating dependencies between variables. *Bioinformatics* **18** 231–240.
- SZÉKELY, G. J., RIZZO, M. L. and BAKIROV, N. K. (2007). Measuring and testing dependence by correlation of distances. *Ann. Statist.* **35** 2769–2794. [MR2382665 https://doi.org/10.1214/009053607000000505](https://doi.org/10.1214/009053607000000505)

VARIABLE SELECTION CONSISTENCY OF GAUSSIAN PROCESS REGRESSION

BY SHENG JIANG^{*} AND SURYA T. TOKDAR[†]

Department of Statistical Science, Duke University, ^{}sheng.jiang@duke.edu, [†]surya.tokdar@duke.edu*

Bayesian nonparametric regression under a rescaled Gaussian process prior offers smoothness-adaptive function estimation with near minimax-optimal error rates. Hierarchical extensions of this approach, equipped with stochastic variable selection, are known to also adapt to the unknown intrinsic dimension of a sparse true regression function. But it remains unclear if such extensions offer variable selection consistency, that is, if the true subset of important variables could be consistently learned from the data. It is shown here that variable consistency may indeed be achieved with such models at least when the true regression function has finite smoothness to induce a polynomially larger penalty on inclusion of false positive predictors. Our result covers the high-dimensional asymptotic setting where the predictor dimension is allowed to grow with the sample size. The proof utilizes Schwartz theory to establish that the posterior probability of wrong selection vanishes asymptotically. A necessary and challenging technical development involves providing sharp upper and lower bounds to small ball probabilities at all rescaling levels of the Gaussian process prior, a result that could be of independent interest.

REFERENCES

- [1] AURZADA, F., IBRAGIMOV, I. A., LIFSHITS, M. A. and VAN ZANTEN, K. Y. (2009). Small deviations of smooth stationary Gaussian processes. *Theory Probab. Appl.* **53** 697–707.
- [2] BERTIN, K. and LECUÉ, G. (2008). Selection of variables and dimension reduction in high-dimensional non-parametric regression. *Electron. J. Stat.* **2** 1224–1241. [MR2461900](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/08-EJS327>
- [3] BHATTACHARYA, A., PATI, D. and DUNSON, D. (2014). Anisotropic function estimation using multi-bandwidth Gaussian processes. *Ann. Statist.* **42** 352–381. [MR3189489](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/13-AOS1192>
- [4] BOGDAN, M., VAN DEN BERG, E., SABATTI, C., SU, W. and CANDÈS, E. J. (2015). SLOPE—adaptive variable selection via convex optimization. *Ann. Appl. Stat.* **9** 1103–1140. [MR3418717](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AOS842>
- [5] BÜHLMANN, P. and VAN DE GEER, S. (2011). *Statistics for High-Dimensional Data: Methods, Theory and Applications*. Springer Series in Statistics. Springer, Heidelberg. [MR2807761](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-642-20192-9>
- [6] BULL, A. D. (2012). Honest adaptive confidence bands and self-similar functions. *Electron. J. Stat.* **6** 1490–1516. [MR2988456](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/12-EJS720>
- [7] BUTUCEA, C. and STEPANOVA, N. (2017). Adaptive variable selection in nonparametric sparse additive models. *Electron. J. Stat.* **11** 2321–2357. [MR3656494](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/17-EJS1275>
- [8] CASTILLO, I. (2008). Lower bounds for posterior rates with Gaussian process priors. *Electron. J. Stat.* **2** 1281–1299. [MR2471287](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/08-EJS273>
- [9] CASTILLO, I., SCHMIDT-HIEBER, J. and VAN DER VAART, A. (2015). Bayesian linear regression with sparse priors. *Ann. Statist.* **43** 1986–2018. [MR3375874](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AOS1334>
- [10] COMMINGES, L. and DALALYAN, A. S. (2012). Tight conditions for consistency of variable selection in the context of high dimensionality. *Ann. Statist.* **40** 2667–2696. [MR3097616](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/12-AOS1046>
- [11] GHOSAL, S., GHOSH, J. K. and VAN DER VAART, A. W. (2000). Convergence rates of posterior distributions. *Ann. Statist.* **28** 500–531. [MR1790007](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1016218228>

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62G08, 62G20; secondary 60G05.

Key words and phrases. Gaussian process priors, high-dimensional regression, nonparametric variable selection, Bayesian inference, adaptive estimation.

- [12] GHOSAL, S., LEMBER, J. and VAN DER VAART, A. (2008). Nonparametric Bayesian model selection and averaging. *Electron. J. Stat.* **2** 63–89. [MR2386086](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/07-EJS090>
- [13] GHOSAL, S. and VAN DER VAART, A. (2007). Convergence rates of posterior distributions for non-i.i.d. observations. *Ann. Statist.* **35** 192–223. [MR2332274](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/009053606000001172>
- [14] GHOSAL, S. and VAN DER VAART, A. (2017). *Fundamentals of Nonparametric Bayesian Inference*. Cambridge Series in Statistical and Probabilistic Mathematics **44**. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge. [MR3587782](#) <https://doi.org/10.1017/9781139029834>
- [15] GINÉ, E. and NICKL, R. (2010). Confidence bands in density estimation. *Ann. Statist.* **38** 1122–1170. [MR2604707](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/09-AOS738>
- [16] HAHN, P. R. and CARVALHO, C. M. (2015). Decoupling shrinkage and selection in Bayesian linear models: A posterior summary perspective. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **110** 435–448. [MR3338514](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2014.993077>
- [17] JIANG, S. and TOKDAR, S. T. (2021). Supplement to “Variable selection consistency of Gaussian process regression.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/20-AOS2043SUPP>.
- [18] KUELBS, J. and LI, W. V. (1993). Metric entropy and the small ball problem for Gaussian measures. *J. Funct. Anal.* **116** 133–157. [MR1237989](#) <https://doi.org/10.1006/jfan.1993.1107>
- [19] LAFFERTY, J. and WASSERMAN, L. (2008). Rodeo: Sparse, greedy nonparametric regression. *Ann. Statist.* **36** 28–63. [MR2387963](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/009053607000000811>
- [20] LI, W. V. and LINDE, W. (1999). Approximation, metric entropy and small ball estimates for Gaussian measures. *Ann. Probab.* **27** 1556–1578. [MR1733160](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aop/1022677459>
- [21] NARISSETTY, N. N. and HE, X. (2014). Bayesian variable selection with shrinking and diffusing priors. *Ann. Statist.* **42** 789–817. [MR3210987](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1207>
- [22] RASKUTTI, G., WAINWRIGHT, M. J. and YU, B. (2012). Minimax-optimal rates for sparse additive models over kernel classes via convex programming. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **13** 389–427. [MR2913704](#)
- [23] RASMUSSEN, C. E. and WILLIAMS, C. K. I. (2006). *Gaussian Processes for Machine Learning*. Adaptive Computation and Machine Learning. MIT Press, Cambridge, MA. [MR2514435](#)
- [24] RAY, K. (2017). Adaptive Bernstein–von Mises theorems in Gaussian white noise. *Ann. Statist.* **45** 2511–2536. [MR3737900](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/16-AOS1533>
- [25] STONE, C. J. (1982). Optimal global rates of convergence for nonparametric regression. *Ann. Statist.* **10** 1040–1053. [MR0673642](#)
- [26] SZABÓ, B., VAN DER VAART, A. W. and VAN ZANTEN, J. H. (2015). Frequentist coverage of adaptive nonparametric Bayesian credible sets. *Ann. Statist.* **43** 1391–1428. [MR3357861](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1270>
- [27] TOKDAR, S. T. (2011). Dimension adaptability of Gaussian process models with variable selection and projection. Preprint . Available at [arXiv:1112.0716](https://arxiv.org/abs/1112.0716).
- [28] VAN DER VAART, A. and VAN ZANTEN, H. (2011). Information rates of nonparametric Gaussian process methods. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **12** 2095–2119. [MR2819028](#)
- [29] VAN DER VAART, A. W. and VAN ZANTEN, J. H. (2008). Reproducing kernel Hilbert spaces of Gaussian priors. In *Pushing the Limits of Contemporary Statistics: Contributions in Honor of Jayanta K. Ghosh*. Inst. Math. Stat. (IMS) Collect. **3** 200–222. IMS, Beachwood, OH. [MR2459226](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/074921708000000156>
- [30] VAN DER VAART, A. W. and VAN ZANTEN, J. H. (2009). Adaptive Bayesian estimation using a Gaussian random field with inverse gamma bandwidth. *Ann. Statist.* **37** 2655–2675. [MR2541442](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/08-AOS678>
- [31] VERZELEN, N. (2012). Minimax risks for sparse regressions: Ultra-high dimensional phenomena. *Electron. J. Stat.* **6** 38–90. [MR2879672](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/12-EJS666>
- [32] WAINWRIGHT, M. J. (2009). Information-theoretic limits on sparsity recovery in the high-dimensional and noisy setting. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **55** 5728–5741. [MR2597190](#) <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2009.2032816>
- [33] WAINWRIGHT, M. J. (2019). *High-Dimensional Statistics: A Non-Asymptotic Viewpoint*. Cambridge Series in Statistical and Probabilistic Mathematics **48**. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge. [MR3967104](#) <https://doi.org/10.1017/9781108627771>
- [34] YANG, Y. and TOKDAR, S. T. (2015). Minimax-optimal nonparametric regression in high dimensions. *Ann. Statist.* **43** 652–674. [MR3319139](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1289>
- [35] YANG, Y., WAINWRIGHT, M. J. and JORDAN, M. I. (2016). On the computational complexity of high-dimensional Bayesian variable selection. *Ann. Statist.* **44** 2497–2532. [MR3576552](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AOS1417>
- [36] ZHANG, P. (1991). Variable selection in nonparametric regression with continuous covariates. *Ann. Statist.* **19** 1869–1882. [MR1135153](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176348375>

OPTIMALITY OF SPECTRAL CLUSTERING IN THE GAUSSIAN MIXTURE MODEL

BY MATTHIAS LÖFFLER^{1,??}, ANDERSON Y. ZHANG^{2,??}, AND HARRISON H. ZHOU^{3,??}

¹Seminar for Statistics, ETH Zürich, ^{??}matthias.loeffler@stat.math.ethz.ch

²Department of Statistics, University of Pennsylvania, ^{??}ayz@wharton.upenn.edu

³Department of Statistics and Data Science, Yale University, ^{??}huibin.zhou@yale.edu

Spectral clustering is one of the most popular algorithms to group high-dimensional data. It is easy to implement and computationally efficient. Despite its popularity and successful applications, its theoretical properties have not been fully understood. In this paper, we show that spectral clustering is minimax optimal in the Gaussian mixture model with isotropic covariance matrix, when the number of clusters is fixed and the signal-to-noise ratio is large enough. Spectral gap conditions are widely assumed in the literature to analyze spectral clustering. On the contrary, these conditions are not needed to establish optimality of spectral clustering in this paper.

REFERENCES

- [1] ABBE, E., FAN, J. and WANG, K. (2020). An ℓ_p -theory of PCA and spectral clustering. Preprint.
- [2] ABBE, E., FAN, J., WANG, K. and ZHONG, Y. (2020). Entrywise eigenvector analysis of random matrices with low expected rank. *Ann. Statist.* **48** 1452–1474. [MR4124330](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/19-AOS1854>
- [3] ALPERT, C. J. and YAO, S. (1995). Spectral partitioning: The more eigenvectors, the better. In *32nd Design Automation Conference* 195–200. IEEE, New York.
- [4] ANANDKUMAR, A., GE, R., HSU, D. and KAKADE, S. M. (2014). A tensor approach to learning mixed membership community models. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **15** 2239–2312. [MR3231594](#)
- [5] BACH, F. R. and JORDAN, M. I. (2006). Learning spectral clustering, with application to speech separation. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **7** 1963–2001. [MR2274430](#)
- [6] BALAKRISHNAN, S., XU, M., KRISHNAMURTHY, A. and SINGH, A. (2011). Noise thresholds for spectral clustering. In *Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems* 954–962.
- [7] BELKIN, M. and NIYOGI, P. (2003). Laplacian eigenmaps for dimensionality reduction and data representation. *Neural Comput.* **15** 1373–1396.
- [8] CHAUDHURI, K., CHUNG, F. and TSIATAS, A. (2012). Spectral clustering of graphs with general degrees in the extended planted partition model. In *Conference on Learning Theory* 35.1–35.23.
- [9] CHEN, X. and YANG, Y. (2020). Cutoff for exact recovery of Gaussian mixture models. Preprint.
- [10] COJA-OGHLAN, A. (2010). Graph partitioning via adaptive spectral techniques. *Combin. Probab. Comput.* **19** 227–284. [MR2593622](#) <https://doi.org/10.1017/S0963548309990514>
- [11] DHILLON, I. S. (2001). Co-clustering documents and words using bipartite spectral graph partitioning. In *Proceedings of the Seventh ACM SIGKDD International Conference on Knowledge Discovery and Data Mining* 269–274. ACM, New York.
- [12] DING, C., HE, X. and SIMON, H. D. (2005). On the equivalence of nonnegative matrix factorization and spectral clustering. In *Proceedings of the 2005 SIAM International Conference on Data Mining* 606–610. SIAM, Philadelphia.
- [13] DING, C. H. Q., HE, X., ZHA, H., GU, M. and SIMON, H. D. (2001). A min-max cut algorithm for graph partitioning and data clustering. In *Proceedings 2001 IEEE International Conference on Data Mining* 107–114. IEEE, New York.
- [14] DING, X. (2020). High dimensional deformed rectangular matrices with applications in matrix denoising. *Bernoulli* **26** 387–417. [MR4036038](#) <https://doi.org/10.3150/19-BEJ1129>
- [15] DONATH, W. E. and HOFFMAN, A. J. (2003). Lower bounds for the partitioning of graphs. In *Selected Papers of Alan J. Hoffman: With Commentary* 437–442. World Scientific, Singapore.

- [16] FEI, Y. and CHEN, Y. (2018). Hidden integrality of SDP relaxations for sub-Gaussian mixture models. In *Conference on Learning Theory* 1931–1965.
- [17] FIEDLER, M. (1973). Algebraic connectivity of graphs. *Czechoslovak Math. J.* **23** 298–305. [MR0318007](#)
- [18] FISHKIND, D. E., SUSSMAN, D. L., TANG, M., VOGELSTEIN, J. T. and PRIEBE, C. E. (2013). Consistent adjacency-spectral partitioning for the stochastic block model when the model parameters are unknown. *SIAM J. Matrix Anal. Appl.* **34** 23–39. [MR3032990](#) <https://doi.org/10.1137/120875600>
- [19] FURUI, S. (1989). Unsupervised speaker adaptation based on hierarchical spectral clustering. *IEEE Trans. Acoust. Speech Signal Process.* **37** 1923–1930.
- [20] GAO, C., MA, Z., ZHANG, A. Y. and ZHOU, H. H. (2018). Community detection in degree-corrected block models. *Ann. Statist.* **46** 2153–2185. [MR3845014](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/17-AOS1615>
- [21] GINÉ, E. and KOLTCHINSKII, V. (2006). Empirical graph Laplacian approximation of Laplace–Beltrami operators: Large sample results. In *High Dimensional Probability. Institute of Mathematical Statistics Lecture Notes—Monograph Series* **51** 238–259. IMS, Beachwood, OH. [MR2387773](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/074921706000000888>
- [22] GINÉ, E. and NICKL, R. (2016). *Mathematical Foundations of Infinite-Dimensional Statistical Models. Cambridge Series in Statistical and Probabilistic Mathematics* **40**. Cambridge Univ. Press, New York. [MR3588285](#) <https://doi.org/10.1017/CBO9781107337862>
- [23] GIRAUD, C. and VERZELEN, N. (2018). Partial recovery bounds for clustering with the relaxed K -means. *Math. Stat. Learn.* **1** 317–374. [MR4059724](#)
- [24] GUATTERY, S. and MILLER, G. L. (1998). On the quality of spectral separators. *SIAM J. Matrix Anal. Appl.* **19** 701–719. [MR1611179](#) <https://doi.org/10.1137/S0895479896312262>
- [25] HALL, K. M. (1970). An r -dimensional quadratic placement algorithm. *Manage. Sci.* **17** 219–229.
- [26] HAN, X., TONG, X. and FAN, Y. (2020). Eigen selection in spectral clustering: A theory guided practice. Preprint.
- [27] HEIN, M. (2006). Uniform convergence of adaptive graph-based regularization. In *Learning Theory. Lecture Notes in Computer Science* **4005** 50–64. Springer, Berlin. [MR2277918](#) https://doi.org/10.1007/11776420_7
- [28] HEIN, M., AUDIBERT, J.-Y. and VON LUXBURG, U. (2005). From graphs to manifolds—Weak and strong pointwise consistency of graph Laplacians. In *Learning Theory. Lecture Notes in Computer Science* **3559** 470–485. Springer, Berlin. [MR2203281](#) https://doi.org/10.1007/11503415_32
- [29] HENDRICKSON, B. and LELAND, R. (1995). An improved spectral graph partitioning algorithm for mapping parallel computations. *SIAM J. Sci. Comput.* **16** 452–469. [MR1317066](#) <https://doi.org/10.1137/0916028>
- [30] INABA, M., KATO, N. and IMAI, H. (1994). Applications of weighted Voronoi diagrams and randomization to variance-based k -clustering. In *Proceedings of 10th ACM Symposium on Computational Geometry* 332–339.
- [31] JIN, J. (2015). Fast community detection by SCORE. *Ann. Statist.* **43** 57–89. [MR3285600](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1265>
- [32] JOHNSTONE, I. M. and PAUL, D. (2018). PCA in high dimensions: An orientation. *Proc. IEEE Inst. Electr. Electron. Eng.* **106** 1277–1292. <https://doi.org/10.1109/JPROC.2018.2846730>
- [33] KANNAN, R. and VEMPALA, S. (2009). Spectral algorithms. *Found. Trends Theor. Comput. Sci.* **4** 157–288. [MR2558901](#) <https://doi.org/10.1561/04000000025>
- [34] KANNAN, R., VEMPALA, S. and VETTA, A. (2004). On clusterings: Good, bad and spectral. *J. ACM* **51** 497–515. [MR2145863](#) <https://doi.org/10.1145/990308.990313>
- [35] KOLTCHINSKII, V. and LOUNICI, K. (2016). Asymptotics and concentration bounds for bilinear forms of spectral projectors of sample covariance. *Ann. Inst. Henri Poincaré Probab. Stat.* **52** 1976–2013. [MR3573302](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AIHP705>
- [36] KOLTCHINSKII, V. and XIA, D. (2016). Perturbation of linear forms of singular vectors under Gaussian noise. In *High Dimensional Probability VII. Progress in Probability* **71** 397–423. Springer, Cham. [MR3565274](#) https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-319-40519-3_18
- [37] KUMAR, A. and KANNAN, R. (2010). Clustering with spectral norm and the k -means algorithm. In *2010 IEEE 51st Annual Symposium on Foundations of Computer Science—FOCS 2010* 299–308. IEEE Computer Soc., Los Alamitos, CA. [MR3025203](#)
- [38] KUMAR, A., SABHARWAL, Y. and SEN, S. (2004). A simple linear time $(1 + \epsilon)$ -approximation algorithm for k -means clustering in any dimensions. In *45th Annual IEEE Symposium on Foundations of Computer Science* 454–462.
- [39] LAURENT, B. and MASSART, P. (2000). Adaptive estimation of a quadratic functional by model selection. *Ann. Statist.* **28** 1302–1338. [MR1805785](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1015957395>
- [40] LEI, J. and RINALDO, A. (2015). Consistency of spectral clustering in stochastic block models. *Ann. Statist.* **43** 215–237. [MR3285605](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1274>

- [41] LLOYD, S. P. (1982). Least squares quantization in PCM. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **28** 129–137. [MR0651807](#)
<https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.1982.1056489>
- [42] LÖFFLER, M., ZHANG, A. Y. and ZHOU, H. H. (2021). Supplement to “Optimality of spectral clustering in the Gaussian mixture model.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/20-AOS2044SUPP>
- [43] LU, Y. and ZHOU, H. H. (2016). Statistical and computational guarantees of Lloyd’s algorithm and its variants. Preprint.
- [44] MAHAJAN, M., NIMBORKAR, P. and VARADARAJAN, K. (2009). The planar k -means problem is NP-hard. In *WALCOM—Algorithms and Computation. Lecture Notes in Computer Science* **5431** 274–285. Springer, Berlin. [MR2540919](#) https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-642-00202-1_24
- [45] MCSHERRY, F. (2001). Spectral partitioning of random graphs. In *42nd IEEE Symposium on Foundations of Computer Science (Las Vegas, NV, 2001)* 529–537. IEEE Computer Soc., Los Alamitos, CA. [MR1948742](#)
- [46] MEILA, M. and SHI, J. (2001). Learning segmentation by random walks. In *Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems* 873–879.
- [47] MONTI, S., TAMAYO, P., MESIROV, J. and GOLUB, T. (2003). Consensus clustering: A resampling-based method for class discovery and visualization of gene expression microarray data. *Mach. Learn.* **52** 91–118.
- [48] NDAOUD, M. (2019). Sharp optimal recovery in the two component Gaussian mixture model. Preprint.
- [49] NG, A. Y., JORDAN, M. I. and WEISS, Y. (2002). On spectral clustering: Analysis and an algorithm. In *Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems* 849–856.
- [50] OTTO, F. and VILLANI, C. (2000). Generalization of an inequality by Talagrand and links with the logarithmic Sobolev inequality. *J. Funct. Anal.* **173** 361–400. [MR1760620](#) <https://doi.org/10.1006/jfan.1999.3557>
- [51] PAN, S. J., NI, X., SUN, J., YANG, Q. and CHEN, Z. (2010). Cross-domain sentiment classification via spectral feature alignment. In *Proceedings of the 19th International Conference on World Wide Web* 751–760. ACM, New York.
- [52] PAUL, D. (2007). Asymptotics of sample eigenstructure for a large dimensional spiked covariance model. *Statist. Sinica* **17** 1617–1642. [MR2399865](#)
- [53] PENG, J. and WEI, Y. (2007). Approximating k -means-type clustering via semidefinite programming. *SIAM J. Optim.* **18** 186–205. [MR2299680](#) <https://doi.org/10.1137/050641983>
- [54] QIN, T. and ROHE, K. (2013). Regularized spectral clustering under the degree-corrected stochastic block-model. In *Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems* 3120–3128.
- [55] ROHE, K., CHATTERJEE, S. and YU, B. (2011). Spectral clustering and the high-dimensional stochastic blockmodel. *Ann. Statist.* **39** 1878–1915. [MR2893856](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/11-AOS887>
- [56] ROYER, M. (2017). Adaptive clustering through semidefinite programming. *Adv. Neural Inf. Process. Syst.* 1795–1803.
- [57] SARKAR, P. and BICKEL, P. J. (2015). Role of normalization in spectral clustering for stochastic block-models. *Ann. Statist.* **43** 962–990. [MR3346694](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1285>
- [58] SHI, J. and MALIK, J. (2000). Normalized cuts and image segmentation. Departmental Papers (CIS) 107.
- [59] SIMON, H. D. (1991). Partitioning of unstructured problems for parallel processing. *Comput. Syst. Eng.* **2** 135–148.
- [60] SPIELMAN, D. A. and TENG, S.-H. (1996). Spectral partitioning works: Planar graphs and finite element meshes. In *37th Annual Symposium on Foundations of Computer Science (Burlington, VT, 1996)* 96–105. IEEE Comput. Soc. Press, Los Alamitos, CA. [MR1450607](#) <https://doi.org/10.1109/SFCS.1996.548468>
- [61] SRIVASTAVA, P. R., PURNAMRITA, S. and HANASUSANTO, G. A. (2020). A robust spectral clustering algorithm for sub-Gaussian mixture models with outliers. Preprint.
- [62] TIBSHIRANI, R., WALTHER, G. and HASTIE, T. (2001). Estimating the number of clusters in a data set via the gap statistic. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **63** 411–423. [MR1841503](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/1467-9868.00293>
- [63] VAN DRIESCHE, R. and ROOSE, D. (1995). An improved spectral bisection algorithm and its application to dynamic load balancing. *Parallel Comput.* **21** 29–48. [MR1314376](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-8191\(94\)00059-J](https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-8191(94)00059-J)
- [64] VEMPALA, S. and WANG, G. (2004). A spectral algorithm for learning mixture models. *J. Comput. System Sci.* **68** 841–860. [MR2059647](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jcss.2003.11.008>
- [65] VON LUXBURG, U. (2007). A tutorial on spectral clustering. *Stat. Comput.* **17** 395–416. [MR2409803](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s11222-007-9033-z>
- [66] VON LUXBURG, U., BELKIN, M. and BOUSQUET, O. (2008). Consistency of spectral clustering. *Ann. Statist.* **36** 555–586. [MR2396807](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/009053607000000640>

- [67] VU, V. (2018). A simple SVD algorithm for finding hidden partitions. *Combin. Probab. Comput.* **27** 124–140. [MR3734334](#) <https://doi.org/10.1017/S0963548317000463>
- [68] WANG, J. (2010). Consistent selection of the number of clusters via crossvalidation. *Biometrika* **97** 893–904. [MR2746159](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asq061>
- [69] YU, S. and SHI, J. (2003). Multiclass spectral clustering. In *Proceedings Ninth IEEE International Conference on Computer Vision* 313–319.
- [70] ZHANG, A. Y. and ZHOU, H. H. (2016). Minimax rates of community detection in stochastic block models. *Ann. Statist.* **44** 2252–2280. [MR3546450](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AOS1428>
- [71] ZHOU, Z. and AMINI, A. A. (2019). Analysis of spectral clustering algorithms for community detection: The general bipartite setting. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **20** Paper No. 47, 47. [MR3948087](#)

ADAPTIVE ESTIMATION OF MULTIVARIATE PIECEWISE POLYNOMIALS AND BOUNDED VARIATION FUNCTIONS BY OPTIMAL DECISION TREES

BY SABYASACHI CHATTERJEE^{1,??} AND SUBHAJIT GOSWAMI^{2,??}

¹Department of Statistics, University of Illinois at Urbana–Champaign, ?? sc1706@illinois.edu

²Tata Institute of Fundamental Research, ?? gswami@math.tifr.res.in

Proposed by Donoho (*Ann. Statist.* **25** (1997) 1870–1911), Dyadic CART is a nonparametric regression method which computes a globally optimal dyadic decision tree and fits piecewise constant functions in two dimensions. In this article, we define and study Dyadic CART and a closely related estimator, namely Optimal Regression Tree (ORT), in the context of estimating piecewise smooth functions in general dimensions in the fixed design setup. More precisely, these optimal decision tree estimators fit piecewise polynomials of any given degree. Like Dyadic CART in two dimensions, we reason that these estimators can also be computed in polynomial time in the sample size N via dynamic programming. We prove oracle inequalities for the finite sample risk of Dyadic CART and ORT, which imply tight risk bounds for several function classes of interest. First, they imply that the finite sample risk of ORT of order $r \geq 0$ is always bounded by $Ck \frac{\log N}{N}$ whenever the regression function is piecewise polynomial of degree r on some reasonably regular axis aligned rectangular partition of the domain with at most k rectangles. Beyond the univariate case, such guarantees are scarcely available in the literature for computationally efficient estimators. Second, our oracle inequalities uncover minimax rate optimality and adaptivity of the Dyadic CART estimator for function spaces with bounded variation. We consider two function spaces of recent interest where multivariate total variation denoising and univariate trend filtering are the state of the art methods. We show that Dyadic CART enjoys certain advantages over these estimators while still maintaining all their known guarantees.

REFERENCES

- BERMAN, P., DASGUPTA, B. and MUTHUKRISHNAN, S. (2002). Exact size of binary space partitionings and improved rectangle tiling algorithms. *SIAM J. Discrete Math.* **15** 252–267. MR1920185 <https://doi.org/10.1137/S0895480101384347>
- BERTIN, K. and LECUÉ, G. (2008). Selection of variables and dimension reduction in high-dimensional non-parametric regression. *Electron. J. Stat.* **2** 1224–1241. MR2461900 <https://doi.org/10.1214/08-EJS327>
- BERTSIMAS, D. and DUNN, J. (2017). Optimal classification trees. *Mach. Learn.* **106** 1039–1082. MR3665788 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10994-017-5633-9>
- BLANCHARD, G., SCHÄFER, C., ROZENHOLC, Y. and MÜLLER, K.-R. (2007). Optimal dyadic decision trees. *Mach. Learn.* **66** 209–241.
- BREIMAN, L., FRIEDMAN, J. H., OLSEN, R. A. and STONE, C. J. (1984). *Classification and Regression Trees*. Wadsworth Statistics/Probability Series. Wadsworth Advanced Books and Software, Belmont, CA. MR0726392
- CHATTERJEE, S. and GOSWAMI, S. (2019). New risk bounds for 2D total variation denoising. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1902.01215](https://arxiv.org/abs/1902.01215).
- CHATTERJEE, S. and GOSWAMI, S. (2021). Supplement to “Adaptive estimation of multivariate piecewise polynomials and bounded variation functions by optimal decision trees.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/20-AOS2045SUPP>

MSC2020 subject classifications. 62G05.

Key words and phrases. Optimal decision trees, Dyadic CART, piecewise polynomial fitting, oracle risk bounds, bounded variation function estimation.

- CHAUDHURI, P., HUANG, M.-C., LOH, W.-Y. and YAO, R. (1994). Piecewise-polynomial regression trees. *Statist. Sinica* **4** 143–167.
- DALALYAN, A. S., HEBIRI, M. and LEDERER, J. (2017). On the prediction performance of the Lasso. *Bernoulli* **23** 552–581. [MR3556784](#) <https://doi.org/10.3150/15-BEJ756>
- DE BERG, M. (1995). Linear size binary space partitions for fat objects. In *Algorithms—ESA’95 (Corfu)*. *Lecture Notes in Computer Science* **979** 252–263. Springer, Berlin. [MR1460747](#) https://doi.org/10.1007/3-540-60313-1_148
- DENG, H. and ZHANG, C.-H. (2020). Isotonic regression in multi-dimensional spaces and graphs. *Ann. Statist.* **48** 3672–3698. [MR4185824](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/20-AOS1947>
- DONOH, D. L. (1997). CART and best-ortho-basis: A connection. *Ann. Statist.* **25** 1870–1911. [MR1474073](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1069362377>
- DONOH, D. L. and JOHNSTONE, I. M. (1998). Minimax estimation via wavelet shrinkage. *Ann. Statist.* **26** 879–921. [MR1635414](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1024691081>
- GEY, S. and NEDELEC, E. (2005). Model selection for CART regression trees. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **51** 658–670. [MR2236074](#) <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2004.840903>
- GUNTUBOYINA, A., LIEU, D., CHATTERJEE, S. and SEN, B. (2020). Adaptive risk bounds in univariate total variation denoising and trend filtering. *Ann. Statist.* **48** 205–229. [MR4065159](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/18-AOS1799>
- HASTIE, T., TIBSHIRANI, R. and FRIEDMAN, J. (2001). *The Elements of Statistical Learning: Data Mining, Inference, and Prediction*. *Springer Series in Statistics*. Springer, New York.
- HERSHBERGER, J., SURI, S. and TÓTH, C. D. (2005). Binary space partitions of orthogonal subdivisions. *SIAM J. Comput.* **34** 1380–1397. [MR2165746](#) <https://doi.org/10.1137/S0097539704445706>
- HÜTTER, J.-C. and RIGOLLET, P. (2016). Optimal rates for total variation denoising. In *Conference on Learning Theory* 1115–1146.
- HYAFIL, L. and RIVEST, R. L. (1976). Constructing optimal binary decision trees is *NP*-complete. *Inform. Process. Lett.* **5** 15–17. [MR0413598](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/0020-0190\(76\)90095-8](https://doi.org/10.1016/0020-0190(76)90095-8)
- ISHWARAN, H. (2015). The effect of splitting on random forests. *Mach. Learn.* **99** 75–118. [MR3324236](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10994-014-5451-2>
- KIM, S.-J., KOH, K., BOYD, S. and GORINEVSKY, D. (2009). l_1 trend filtering. *SIAM Rev.* **51** 339–360. [MR2505584](#) <https://doi.org/10.1137/070690274>
- LECUÉ, G. (2008). Classification with minimax fast rates for classes of Bayes rules with sparse representation. *Electron. J. Stat.* **2** 741–773. [MR2430253](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/07-EJS015>
- LOH, W.-Y. (2014). Fifty years of classification and regression trees. *Int. Stat. Rev.* **82** 329–348. [MR3280974](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/insr.12016>
- MAMMEN, E. and VAN DE GEER, S. (1997). Locally adaptive regression splines. *Ann. Statist.* **25** 387–413. [MR1429931](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1034276635>
- NEMIROVSKI, A. (2000). Topics in non-parametric statistics. In *Lectures on Probability Theory and Statistics (Saint-Flour, 1998)*. *Lecture Notes in Math.* **1738** 85–277. Springer, Berlin. [MR1775640](#)
- NOWAK, R., MITRA, U. and WILLETT, R. (2004). Estimating inhomogeneous fields using wireless sensor networks. *IEEE J. Sel. Areas Commun.* **22** 999–1006.
- ORTELLI, F. and VAN DE GEER, S. (2018). On the total variation regularized estimator over a class of tree graphs. *Electron. J. Stat.* **12** 4517–4570. [MR3892703](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/18-ejs1519>
- RUDIN, L. I., OSHER, S. and FATEMI, E. (1992). Nonlinear total variation based noise removal algorithms **60** 259–268. [MR3363401](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-2789\(92\)90242-F](https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-2789(92)90242-F)
- SADHANALA, V., WANG, Y.-X. and TIBSHIRANI, R. J. (2016). Total variation classes beyond 1d: Minimax rates, and the limitations of linear smoothers. In *Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems* 3513–3521.
- SCORNET, E., BIAU, G. and VERT, J.-P. (2015). Consistency of random forests. *Ann. Statist.* **43** 1716–1741. [MR3357876](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AOS1321>
- SCOTT, C. and NOWAK, R. D. (2006). Minimax-optimal classification with dyadic decision trees. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **52** 1335–1353. [MR2241192](#) <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2006.871056>
- STEIDL, G., DIDAS, S. and NEUMANN, J. (2006). Splines in higher order TV regularization. *Int. J. Comput. Vis.* **70** 241–255.
- TIBSHIRANI, R. J. (2014). Adaptive piecewise polynomial estimation via trend filtering. *Ann. Statist.* **42** 285–323. [MR3189487](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/13-AOS1189>
- TIBSHIRANI, R. (2015). Nonparametric regression (and classification).
- TÓTH, C. D. (2005). Binary space partitions: Recent developments. In *Combinatorial and Computational Geometry*. *Math. Sci. Res. Inst. Publ.* **52** 529–556. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge. [MR2178338](#)
- VAN DE GEER, S. and ORTELLI, F. (2019). Prediction bounds for (higher order) total variation regularized least squares. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1904.10871](#).

- WAGER, S. and WALTHER, G. (2015). Adaptive concentration of regression trees, with application to random forests. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1503.06388](https://arxiv.org/abs/1503.06388).
- WILLETT, R. M. and NOWAK, R. D. (2007). Multiscale Poisson intensity and density estimation. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **53** 3171–3187. [MR2417680 https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2007.903139](https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2007.903139)

RANK-BASED ESTIMATION UNDER ASYMPTOTIC DEPENDENCE AND INDEPENDENCE, WITH APPLICATIONS TO SPATIAL EXTREMES

BY MICHAËL LALANCETTE^{1,*}, SEBASTIAN ENGELKE^{2,??} AND
STANISLAV VOLGUSHEV^{1,†}

¹*Department of Statistical Sciences, University of Toronto, *lalancette@utstat.toronto.edu, †stanislav.volgushev@utoronto.ca*

²*Research Center for Statistics, University of Geneva, ??sebastian.engelke@unige.ch*

Multivariate extreme value theory is concerned with modeling the joint tail behavior of several random variables. Existing work mostly focuses on asymptotic dependence, where the probability of observing a large value in one of the variables is of the same order as observing a large value in all variables simultaneously. However, there is growing evidence that asymptotic independence is equally important in real world applications. Available statistical methodology in the latter setting is scarce and not well understood theoretically. We revisit nonparametric estimation and introduce rank-based M-estimators for parametric models that simultaneously work under asymptotic dependence and asymptotic independence, without requiring prior knowledge on which of the two regimes applies. Asymptotic normality of the proposed estimators is established under weak regularity conditions. We further show how bivariate estimators can be leveraged to obtain parametric estimators in spatial tail models, and again provide a thorough theoretical justification for our approach.

REFERENCES

- ASADI, P., DAVISON, A. C. and ENGELKE, S. (2015). Extremes on river networks. *Ann. Appl. Stat.* **9** 2023–2050. [MR3456363](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AOS863>
- BROWN, B. M. and RESNICK, S. I. (1977). Extreme values of independent stochastic processes. *J. Appl. Probab.* **14** 732–739. [MR0517438](#) <https://doi.org/10.2307/3213346>
- BÜCHER, A. and DETTE, H. (2013). Multiplier bootstrap of tail copulas with applications. *Bernoulli* **19** 1655–1687. [MR3129029](#) <https://doi.org/10.3150/12-BEJ425>
- BÜCHER, A., SEGERS, J. and VOLGUSHEV, S. (2014). When uniform weak convergence fails: Empirical processes for dependence functions and residuals via epi- and hypographs. *Ann. Statist.* **42** 1598–1634. [MR3262462](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1237>
- BÜCHER, A., VOLGUSHEV, S. and ZOU, N. (2019). On second order conditions in the multivariate block maxima and peak over threshold method. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **173** 604–619. [MR3959186](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2019.04.011>
- COLES, S., HEFFERNAN, J. and TAWN, J. (1999). Dependence measures for extreme value analyses. *Extremes* **2** 339–365.
- CSÖRGŐ, M. and HORVÁTH, L. (1987). Approximation of intermediate quantile processes. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **21** 250–262. [MR0884099](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/0047-259X\(87\)90004-2](https://doi.org/10.1016/0047-259X(87)90004-2)
- DAVISON, A. C. and GHOLAMREZAEI, M. M. (2012). Geostatistics of extremes. *Proc. R. Soc. Lond. Ser. A Math. Phys. Eng. Sci.* **468** 581–608. [MR2874052](#) <https://doi.org/10.1098/rspa.2011.0412>
- DAVISON, A. C., PADOAN, S. A. and RIBATET, M. (2012). Statistical modeling of spatial extremes. *Statist. Sci.* **27** 161–186. [MR2963980](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/11-STS376>
- DE HAAN, L. and FERREIRA, A. (2006). *Extreme Value Theory: An Introduction*. Springer Series in Operations Research and Financial Engineering. Springer, New York. [MR2234156](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/0-387-34471-3>
- DE HAAN, L. and LIN, T. (2001). On convergence toward an extreme value distribution in $C[0, 1]$. *Ann. Probab.* **29** 467–483. [MR1825160](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aop/1008956340>

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62G32; secondary 62F12, 62G20, 62G30.

Key words and phrases. Multivariate extremes, asymptotic independence, inverted max-stable distribution, spatial process, M-estimation.

- DE HAAN, L., NEVES, C. and PENG, L. (2008). Parametric tail copula estimation and model testing. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **99** 1260–1275. [MR2419346](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2007.08.003>
- DOMBRY, C., ENGELKE, S. and OESTING, M. (2017). Asymptotic properties of the maximum likelihood estimator for multivariate extreme value distributions. Available from <https://arxiv.org/abs/1612.05178>.
- DRAISMA, G., DREES, H., FERREIRA, A. and DE HAAN, L. (2004). Bivariate tail estimation: Dependence in asymptotic independence. *Bernoulli* **10** 251–280. [MR2046774](#) <https://doi.org/10.3150/bj/1082380219>
- DREES, H. and HUANG, X. (1998). Best attainable rates of convergence for estimators of the stable tail dependence function. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **64** 25–47. [MR1619974](#) <https://doi.org/10.1006/jmva.1997.1708>
- EINMAHL, J. H. J., KRAJINA, A. and SEGERS, J. (2008). A method of moments estimator of tail dependence. *Bernoulli* **14** 1003–1026. [MR2543584](#) <https://doi.org/10.3150/08-BEJ130>
- EINMAHL, J. H. J., KRAJINA, A. and SEGERS, J. (2012). An M -estimator for tail dependence in arbitrary dimensions. *Ann. Statist.* **40** 1764–1793. [MR3015043](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/12-AOS1023>
- EINMAHL, J. H. J. and SEGERS, J. (2009). Maximum empirical likelihood estimation of the spectral measure of an extreme-value distribution. *Ann. Statist.* **37** 2953–2989. [MR2541452](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/08-AOS677>
- EINMAHL, J. H. J., KIRILIOUK, A., KRAJINA, A. and SEGERS, J. (2016). An M -estimator of spatial tail dependence. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **78** 275–298. [MR3453656](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/rssb.12114>
- ENGELKE, S. and HITZ, A. S. (2020). Graphical models for extremes. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **82** 871–932. [MR4136498](#)
- ENGELKE, S. and IVANOV, J. (2021). Sparse structures for multivariate extremes. *Annu. Rev. Stat. Appl.* **8**. <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-statistics-040620-041554>
- ENGELKE, S., OPITZ, T. and WADSWORTH, J. (2019). Extremal dependence of random scale constructions. *Extremes* **22** 623–666. [MR4031852](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10687-019-00353-3>
- ENGELKE, S., MALINOWSKI, A., KABLUCHKO, Z. and SCHLATHER, M. (2015). Estimation of Hüsler–Reiss distributions and Brown–Resnick processes. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **77** 239–265. [MR3299407](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/rssb.12074>
- GUILLOTTE, S., PERRON, F. and SEGERS, J. (2011). Non-parametric Bayesian inference on bivariate extremes. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **73** 377–406. [MR2815781](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9868.2010.00770.x>
- GUMBEL, É. J. (1960). Distributions des valeurs extrêmes en plusieurs dimensions. *Publ. Inst. Stat. Univ. Paris* **9** 171–173. [MR0119279](#)
- HEFFERNAN, J. E. and RESNICK, S. I. (2007). Limit laws for random vectors with an extreme component. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* **17** 537–571. [MR2308335](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/105051606000000835>
- HEFFERNAN, J. E. and TAWN, J. A. (2004). A conditional approach for multivariate extreme values. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **66** 497–546. With discussions and reply by the authors. [MR2088289](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9868.2004.02050.x>
- HUANG, X. (1992). Statistics of bivariate extreme value theory. Ph.D. thesis, Erasmus Univ. Rotterdam.
- HUSER, R., OPITZ, T. and THIBAUD, E. (2017). Bridging asymptotic independence and dependence in spatial extremes using Gaussian scale mixtures. *Spat. Stat.* **21** 166–186. [MR3692183](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.spasta.2017.06.004>
- HUSER, R. and WADSWORTH, J. L. (2019). Modeling spatial processes with unknown extremal dependence class. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **114** 434–444. [MR3941266](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2017.1411813>
- HÜSLER, J. and REISS, R.-D. (1989). Maxima of normal random vectors: Between independence and complete dependence. *Statist. Probab. Lett.* **7** 283–286. [MR0980699](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-7152\(89\)90106-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-7152(89)90106-5)
- KABLUCHKO, Z., SCHLATHER, M. and DE HAAN, L. (2009). Stationary max-stable fields associated to negative definite functions. *Ann. Probab.* **37** 2042–2065. [MR2561440](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/09-AOP455>
- KEEF, C., TAWN, J. and SVENSSON, C. (2009). Spatial risk assessment for extreme river flows. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. C. Appl. Stat.* **58** 601–618. [MR2750258](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9876.2009.00672.x>
- LALANCETTE, M., ENGELKE, S. and VOLGUSHEV, S. (2021). Supplement to “Rank-based estimation under asymptotic dependence and independence, with applications to spatial extremes.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/20-AOS2046SUPP>
- LE, P. D., DAVISON, A. C., ENGELKE, S., LEONARD, M. and WESTRA, S. (2018). Dependence properties of spatial rainfall extremes and areal reduction factors. *J. Hydrol.* **565** 711–719.
- LEDFORD, A. W. and TAWN, J. A. (1996). Statistics for near independence in multivariate extreme values. *Biometrika* **83** 169–187. [MR1399163](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/83.1.169>
- LEDFORD, A. W. and TAWN, J. A. (1997). Modelling dependence within joint tail regions. *J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. B* **59** 475–499. [MR1440592](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/1467-9868.00080>
- PADOAN, S. A., RIBATET, M. and SISSON, S. A. (2010). Likelihood-based inference for max-stable processes. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **105** 263–277. [MR2757202](#) <https://doi.org/10.1198/jasa.2009.tm08577>
- PENG, L. (1999). Estimation of the coefficient of tail dependence in bivariate extremes. *Statist. Probab. Lett.* **43** 399–409. [MR1707950](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0167-7152\(98\)00280-6](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0167-7152(98)00280-6)

- PENG, L. and QI, Y. (2008). Bootstrap approximation of tail dependence function. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **99** 1807–1824. [MR2444820 https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2008.01.018](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2008.01.018)
- POON, S.-H., ROCKINGER, M. and TAWN, J. (2004). Extreme value dependence in financial markets: Diagnostics, models, and financial implications. *Rev. Financ. Stud.* **17** 581–610.
- RAMOS, A. and LEDFORD, A. (2009). A new class of models for bivariate joint tails. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **71** 219–241. [MR2655531 https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9868.2008.00684.x](https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9868.2008.00684.x)
- RESNICK, S. I. (1987). *Extreme Values, Regular Variation, and Point Processes. Applied Probability. A Series of the Applied Probability Trust* **4**. Springer, New York. [MR0900810 https://doi.org/10.1007/978-0-387-75953-1](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-0-387-75953-1)
- RESNICK, S. (2002). Hidden regular variation, second order regular variation and asymptotic independence. *Extremes* **5** 303–336. [MR2002121 https://doi.org/10.1023/A:1025148622954](https://doi.org/10.1023/A:1025148622954)
- ROCKAFELLAR, R. T. (1970). *Convex Analysis. Princeton Mathematical Series* **28**. Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton, N.J. [MR0274683](https://doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511526477)
- SCHLATHER, M. (2002). Models for stationary max-stable random fields. *Extremes* **5** 33–44. [MR1947786 https://doi.org/10.1023/A:1020977924878](https://doi.org/10.1023/A:1020977924878)
- SMITH, R. L. (1990). Max-stable processes and spatial extremes. Unpublished manuscript.
- TAWN, J. A. (1988). Bivariate extreme value theory: Models and estimation. *Biometrika* **75** 397–415. [MR0967580 https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/75.3.397](https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/75.3.397)
- WADSWORTH, J. L. and TAWN, J. A. (2012). Dependence modelling for spatial extremes. *Biometrika* **99** 253–272. [MR2931252 https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asr080](https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asr080)
- WADSWORTH, J. L., TAWN, J. A., DAVISON, A. C. and ELTON, D. M. (2017). Modelling across extremal dependence classes. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **79** 149–175. [MR3597968 https://doi.org/10.1111/rssb.12157](https://doi.org/10.1111/rssb.12157)
- WELLER, G. B. and COOLEY, D. (2014). A sum characterization of hidden regular variation with likelihood inference via expectation–maximization. *Biometrika* **101** 17–36. [MR3180655 https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/ast046](https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/ast046)
- WESTRA, S. and SISSON, S. A. (2011). Detection of non-stationarity in precipitation extremes using a max-stable process model. *J. Hydrol.* **406** 119–128.
- ZHOU, C. (2010). Dependence structure of risk factors and diversification effects. *Insurance Math. Econom.* **46** 531–540. [MR2642530 https://doi.org/10.1016/j.insmatheco.2010.01.010](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.insmatheco.2010.01.010)
- ZSCHEISCHLER, J. and SENEVIRATNE, S. I. (2017). Dependence of drivers affects risks associated with compound events. *Sci. Adv.* **3** e1700263. <https://doi.org/10.1126/sciadv.1700263>

ESTIMATION OF SMOOTH FUNCTIONALS IN NORMAL MODELS: BIAS REDUCTION AND ASYMPTOTIC EFFICIENCY

BY VLADIMIR KOLTCHINSKII* AND MAYYA ZHILOVA†

*School of Mathematics, Georgia Institute of Technology, *vlad@math.gatech.edu, †mzhilova@math.gatech.edu*

Let $X_1, \dots, X_n$ be i.i.d. random variables sampled from a normal distribution $N(\mu, \Sigma)$ in $\mathbb{R}^d$ with unknown parameter $\theta = (\mu, \Sigma) \in \Theta := \mathbb{R}^d \times \mathcal{C}_+^d$, where $\mathcal{C}_+^d$ is the cone of positively definite covariance operators in $\mathbb{R}^d$. Given a smooth functional $f : \Theta \mapsto \mathbb{R}^1$, the goal is to estimate $f(\theta)$ based on $X_1, \dots, X_n$. Let

$$\Theta(a; d) := \mathbb{R}^d \times \{\Sigma \in \mathcal{C}_+^d : \sigma(\Sigma) \subset [1/a, a]\}, \quad a \geq 1,$$

where $\sigma(\Sigma)$ is the spectrum of covariance Σ . Let $\hat{\theta} := (\hat{\mu}, \hat{\Sigma})$, where $\hat{\mu}$ is the sample mean and $\hat{\Sigma}$ is the sample covariance, based on the observations $X_1, \dots, X_n$. For an arbitrary functional $f \in C^s(\Theta)$, $s = k + 1 + \rho$, $k \geq 0$, $\rho \in (0, 1]$, we define a functional $f_k : \Theta \mapsto \mathbb{R}$ such that

$$\sup_{\theta \in \Theta(a; d)} \|f_k(\hat{\theta}) - f(\theta)\|_{L_2(\mathbb{P}_\theta)} \lesssim_{s, \beta} \|f\|_{C^s(\Theta)} \left[\left(\frac{a}{\sqrt{n}} \vee a^{\beta s} \left(\sqrt{\frac{d}{n}} \right)^s \right) \wedge 1 \right],$$

where $\beta = 1$ for $k = 0$ and $\beta > s - 1$ is arbitrary for $k \geq 1$. This error rate is minimax optimal and similar bounds hold for more general loss functions. If $d = d_n \leq n^\alpha$ for some $\alpha \in (0, 1)$ and $s \geq \frac{1}{1-\alpha}$, the rate becomes $O(n^{-1/2})$. Moreover, for $s > \frac{1}{1-\alpha}$, the estimator $f_k(\hat{\theta})$ is shown to be asymptotically efficient. The crucial part of the construction of estimator $f_k(\hat{\theta})$ is a bias reduction method studied in the paper for more general statistical models than normal.

REFERENCES

- [1] ADAMCZAK, R. and WOLFF, P. (2015). Concentration inequalities for non-Lipschitz functions with bounded derivatives of higher order. *Probab. Theory Related Fields* **162** 531–586. [MR3383337](https://doi.org/10.1007/s00440-014-0579-3)
- [2] ALEKSANDROV, A. B. and PELLER, V. V. (2016). Operator Lipschitz functions. *Uspekhi Mat. Nauk* **71** 3–106. [MR3588921](https://doi.org/10.4213/rm9729)
- [3] BICKEL, P. J., KLAASSEN, C. A. J., RITOV, Y. and WELLNER, J. A. (1993). *Efficient and Adaptive Estimation for Semiparametric Models. Johns Hopkins Series in the Mathematical Sciences*. Johns Hopkins Univ. Press, Baltimore, MD. [MR1245941](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176324452)
- [4] BICKEL, P. J. and RITOV, Y. (1988). Estimating integrated squared density derivatives: Sharp best order of convergence estimates. *Sankhyā Ser. A* **50** 381–393. [MR1065550](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176324452)
- [5] BIRGÉ, L. and MASSART, P. (1995). Estimation of integral functionals of a density. *Ann. Statist.* **23** 11–29. [MR1331653](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176324452)
- [6] CAI, T. T. and LOW, M. G. (2005). On adaptive estimation of linear functionals. *Ann. Statist.* **33** 2311–2343. [MR2211088](https://doi.org/10.1214/009053605000000633)
- [7] CAI, T. T. and LOW, M. G. (2005). Nonquadratic estimators of a quadratic functional. *Ann. Statist.* **33** 2930–2956. [MR2253108](https://doi.org/10.1214/009053605000000147)
- [8] COLLIER, O., COMMINGES, L. and TSYBAKOV, A. B. (2017). Minimax estimation of linear and quadratic functionals on sparsity classes. *Ann. Statist.* **45** 923–958. [MR3662444](https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AOS1432)

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62H12; secondary 62G20, 62H25, 60B20.

Key words and phrases. Efficiency, smooth functionals, bias reduction, bootstrap chain, random homotopy, concentration.

- [9] DONOHO, D. and LIU, R. (1987). On minimax estimation of linear functionals Technical Report N 105, Department of Statistics, UC Berkeley.
- [10] DONOHO, D. L. and LIU, R. C. (1991). Geometrizing rates of convergence. II, III. *Ann. Statist.* **19** 633–667, 668–701. [MR1105839](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176348114>
- [11] DONOHO, D. L. and NUSSBAUM, M. (1990). Minimax quadratic estimation of a quadratic functional. *J. Complexity* **6** 290–323. [MR1081043](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/0885-064X\(90\)90025-9](https://doi.org/10.1016/0885-064X(90)90025-9)
- [12] FAA DI BRUNO, F. (1855). Sullo sviluppo delle funzioni. *Annali di Scienze Matematiche e Fisiche* **6** 479–480.
- [13] GILL, R. D. and LEVIT, B. Y. (1995). Applications of the Van Trees inequality: A Bayesian Cramér–Rao bound. *Bernoulli* **1** 59–79. [MR1354456](#) <https://doi.org/10.2307/3318681>
- [14] GIRKO, V. L. (1987). An introduction to general statistical analysis. *Theory Probab. Appl.* **32** 229–242.
- [15] GIRKO, V. L. (1995). *Statistical Analysis of Observations of Increasing Dimension. Theory and Decision Library. Series B: Mathematical and Statistical Methods* **28**. Kluwer Academic, Dordrecht. [MR1473719](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-94-015-8567-5>
- [16] HAN, Y., JIAO, J. and MUKHERJEE, R. (2020). On estimation of L_r -norms in Gaussian white noise models. *Probab. Theory Related Fields* **177** 1243–1294. [MR4126939](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s00440-020-00982-x>
- [17] HARDY, M. (2006). Combinatorics of partial derivatives. *Electron. J. Combin.* **13** Research Paper 1. [MR2200529](#)
- [18] IBRAGIMOV, I. A. and HAS’MINSKIĬ, R. Z. (1981). *Statistical Estimation: Asymptotic Theory. Applications of Mathematics* **16**. Springer, New York. [MR0620321](#)
- [19] IBRAGIMOV, I. A., NEMIROVSKIĬ, A. S. and KHAS’MINSKIĬ, R. Z. (1987). Some problems of nonparametric estimation in Gaussian white noise. *Theory Probab. Appl.* **31** 391–406.
- [20] JIAO, J. and HAN, Y. (2020). Bias correction with jackknife, bootstrap, and Taylor series. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **66** 4392–4418. [MR4130622](#) <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2020.2969439>
- [21] JOST, J., KELL, M. and RODRIGUES, C. S. (2015). Representation of Markov chains by random maps: Existence and regularity conditions. *Calc. Var. Partial Differential Equations* **54** 2637–2655. [MR3412387](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s00526-015-0878-2>
- [22] KLEMELÄ, J. (2006). Sharp adaptive estimation of quadratic functionals. *Probab. Theory Related Fields* **134** 539–564. [MR2214904](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s00440-005-0447-2>
- [23] KOLTCHINSKII, V. (2020). Estimation of smooth functionals in high-dimensional models: bootstrap chains and Gaussian approximation. Available at [arXiv:2011.03789](#).
- [24] KOLTCHINSKII, V. (2018). Asymptotic efficiency in high-dimensional covariance estimation. In *Proceedings of the International Congress of Mathematicians—Rio de Janeiro 2018. Vol. IV. Invited Lectures* 2921–2943. World Sci. Publ., Hackensack, NJ. [MR3966516](#)
- [25] KOLTCHINSKII, V. (2021). Asymptotically efficient estimation of smooth functionals of covariance operators. *J. Eur. Math. Soc. (JEMS)*. **23** 765–843. [MR4210724](#) <https://doi.org/10.4171/JEMS/1023>
- [26] KOLTCHINSKII, V., LÖFFLER, M. and NICKL, R. (2020). Efficient estimation of linear functionals of principal components. *Ann. Statist.* **48** 464–490. [MR4065170](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/19-AOS1816>
- [27] KOLTCHINSKII, V. and LOUNICI, K. (2016). Asymptotics and concentration bounds for bilinear forms of spectral projectors of sample covariance. *Ann. Inst. Henri Poincaré Probab. Stat.* **52** 1976–2013. [MR3573302](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AIHP705>
- [28] KOLTCHINSKII, V. and LOUNICI, K. (2017). Concentration inequalities and moment bounds for sample covariance operators. *Bernoulli* **23** 110–133. [MR3556768](#) <https://doi.org/10.3150/15-BEJ730>
- [29] KOLTCHINSKII, V. and LOUNICI, K. (2017). Normal approximation and concentration of spectral projectors of sample covariance. *Ann. Statist.* **45** 121–157. [MR3611488](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/16-AOS1437>
- [30] KOLTCHINSKII, V. and XIA, D. (2016). Perturbation of linear forms of singular vectors under Gaussian noise. In *High Dimensional Probability VII. Progress in Probability* **71** 397–423. Springer, Cham. [MR3565274](#) https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-319-40519-3_18
- [31] KOLTCHINSKII, V. and ZHILOVA, M. (2021). Efficient estimation of smooth functionals in Gaussian shift models. *Ann. Inst. Henri Poincaré Probab. Stat.* To appear. Available at [arXiv:1810.02767](#).
- [32] KOLTCHINSKII, V. and ZHILOVA, M. (2021). Estimation of smooth functionals of location parameter in Gaussian and Poincaré random shift models. *Sankhyā*. To appear.
- [33] KOLTCHINSKII, V. and ZHILOVA, M. (2021). Supplement to “Estimation of smooth functionals in normal models: Bias reduction and asymptotic efficiency.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/20-AOS2047SUPP>.
- [34] LAURENT, B. (1996). Efficient estimation of integral functionals of a density. *Ann. Statist.* **24** 659–681. [MR1394981](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1032894458>
- [35] LEPSKI, O., NEMIROVSKI, A. and SPOKOINY, V. (1999). On estimation of the L_r norm of a regression function. *Probab. Theory Related Fields* **113** 221–253. [MR1670867](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s004409970006>

- [36] LEVIT, B. Y. (1975). The efficiency of a certain class of nonparametric estimators. *Theory Probab. Appl.* **20** 723–740.
- [37] LEVIT, B. Y. (1978). Asymptotically efficient estimation of nonlinear functionals. *Problemy Peredachi Informatsii* **14** 65–72. [MR0533450](#)
- [38] MUKHERJEE, R., NEWEY, W. and ROBINS, J. (2017). Semiparametric efficient empirical higher order influence function estimators. Available at [arXiv:1705.07577](#).
- [39] NEMIROVSKI, A. (2000). Topics in non-parametric statistics. In *Lectures on Probability Theory and Statistics (Saint-Flour, 1998)*. *Lecture Notes in Math.* **1738** 85–277. Springer, Berlin. [MR1775640](#)
- [40] NEMIROVSKIĬ, A. S. (1990). Necessary conditions for efficient estimation of functionals of a nonparametric signal observed in white noise. *Theory Probab. Appl.* **35** 94–103.
- [41] PISIER, G. (1986). Probabilistic methods in the geometry of Banach spaces. In *Probability and Analysis (Varenna, 1985)*. *Lecture Notes in Math.* **1206** 167–241. Springer, Berlin. [MR0864714](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/BFb0076302>
- [42] ROBINS, J., LI, L., TCHETGEN, E. and VAN DER VAART, A. (2008). Higher order influence functions and minimax estimation of nonlinear functionals. In *Probability and Statistics: Essays in Honor of David A. Freedman. Inst. Math. Stat. (IMS) Collect.* **2** 335–421. IMS, Beachwood, OH. [MR2459958](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/193940307000000527>
- [43] ROBINS, J. M., LI, L., TCHETGEN, E. T. and VAN DER VAART, A. (2016). Asymptotic normality of quadratic estimators. *Stochastic Process. Appl.* **126** 3733–3759. [MR3565475](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.spa.2016.04.005>
- [44] TRIEBEL, H. (1983). *Theory of Function Spaces. Monographs in Mathematics* **78**. Birkhäuser, Basel. [MR0781540](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-0346-0416-1>
- [45] VAN DER VAART, A. (2014). Higher order tangent spaces and influence functions. *Statist. Sci.* **29** 679–686. [MR3300365](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/14-STS478>
- [46] VILLANI, C. (2009). *Optimal Transport. Old and New*. Springer, Berlin. [MR2459454](#)

ADDITIVE REGRESSION FOR NON-EUCLIDEAN RESPONSES AND PREDICTORS

BY JEONG MIN JEON^{1,*}, BYEONG U. PARK^{2,??} AND INGRID VAN KEILEGOM^{1,†}

¹ORSTAT, KU Leuven, *jeongmin.jeon@kuleuven.be, †ingrid.vankeilegom@kuleuven.be

²Department of Statistics, Seoul National University, ??bupark@stats.snu.ac.kr

Additive regression is studied in a very general setting where both the response and predictors are allowed to be non-Euclidean. The response takes values in a general separable Hilbert space, whereas the predictors take values in general semimetric spaces, which covers a very wide range of nonstandard response variables and predictors. A general framework of estimating additive models is presented for semimetric space-valued predictors. In particular, full details of implementation and the corresponding theory are given for predictors taking values in Hilbert spaces and/or Riemannian manifolds. The existence of the estimators, convergence of a backfitting algorithm, rates of convergence and asymptotic distributions of the estimators are discussed. The finite sample performance of the estimators is investigated by means of two simulation studies. Finally, three data sets covering several types of non-Euclidean data are analyzed to illustrate the usefulness of the proposed general approach.

REFERENCES

- [1] CHACÓN, J. E., MATEU-FIGUERAS, G. and MARTÍN-FERNÁNDEZ LAUDER, J. A. (2014). Gaussian kernels for density estimation with compositional data. *Comput. Geosci.* **37** 702–711.
- [2] CHAKRABORTY, R. and VEMURI, B. C. (2019). Statistics on the Stiefel manifold: Theory and applications. *Ann. Statist.* **47** 415–438. [MR3909937](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/18-AOS1692>
- [3] CHENG, M.-Y. and WU, H.-T. (2013). Local linear regression on manifolds and its geometric interpretation. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **108** 1421–1434. [MR3174718](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2013.827984>
- [4] CORNEA, E., ZHU, H., KIM, P. and IBRAHIM, J. G. (2017). Regression models on Riemannian symmetric spaces. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **79** 463–482. [MR3611755](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/rssb.12169>
- [5] DI MARZIO, M., PANZERA, A. and TAYLOR, C. C. (2009). Local polynomial regression for circular predictors. *Statist. Probab. Lett.* **79** 2066–2075. [MR2571770](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.spl.2009.06.014>
- [6] DI MARZIO, M., PANZERA, A. and TAYLOR, C. C. (2014). Nonparametric regression for spherical data. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **109** 748–763. [MR3223747](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2013.866567>
- [7] DI MARZIO, M., PANZERA, A. and VENIERI, C. (2015). Non-parametric regression for compositional data. *Stat. Model.* **15** 113–133. [MR3325749](#) <https://doi.org/10.1177/1471082X14535522>
- [8] DRYDEN, I. L. and MARDIA, K. V. (2016). *Statistical Shape Analysis with Applications in R*, 2nd ed. *Wiley Series in Probability and Statistics*. Wiley, Chichester. [MR3559734](#) <https://doi.org/10.1002/9781119072492>
- [9] EGOZCUE, J. J., PAWLOWSKY-GLAHN, V., MATEU-FIGUERAS, G. and BARCELÓ-VIDAL, C. (2003). Isometric logratio transformations for compositional data analysis. *Math. Geol.* **35** 279–300. [MR1986165](#) <https://doi.org/10.1023/A:1023818214614>
- [10] FAN, Y., JAMES, G. M. and RADCHENKO, P. (2015). Functional additive regression. *Ann. Statist.* **43** 2296–2325. [MR3396986](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AOS1346>
- [11] FEBREIRO-BANDE, M. and GONZÁLEZ-MANTEIGA, W. (2013). Generalized additive models for functional data. *TEST* **22** 278–292. [MR3062258](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s11749-012-0308-0>
- [12] GONZALEZ-MANTEIGA, W., HENRY, G. and RODRIGUEZ, D. (2012). Partly linear models on Riemannian manifolds. *J. Appl. Stat.* **39** 1797–1809. [MR2935559](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/02664763.2012.683169>

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62G08; secondary 62G20.

Key words and phrases. Additive models, smooth backfitting, Hilbert spaces, Riemannian manifolds, non-Euclidean data, functional data, density-valued data, compositional data, directional data, shape data.

- [13] HAN, K., MÜLLER, H.-G. and PARK, B. U. (2018). Smooth backfitting for additive modeling with small errors-in-variables, with an application to additive functional regression for multiple predictor functions. *Bernoulli* **24** 1233–1265. MR3706793 <https://doi.org/10.3150/16-BEJ898>
- [14] HAN, K., MÜLLER, H.-G. and PARK, B. U. (2020). Additive functional regression for densities as responses. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **115** 997–1010. MR4107695 <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2019.1604365>
- [15] HAN, K. and PARK, B. U. (2018). Smooth backfitting for errors-in-variables additive models. *Ann. Statist.* **46** 2216–2250. MR3845016 <https://doi.org/10.1214/17-AOS1617>
- [16] HENRY, G. and RODRIGUEZ, D. (2009). Kernel density estimation on Riemannian manifolds: Asymptotic results. *J. Math. Imaging Vision* **34** 235–239. MR2515446 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10851-009-0145-2>
- [17] HIELSCHER, R. (2013). Kernel density estimation on the rotation group and its application to crystallographic texture analysis. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **119** 119–143. MR3061419 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2013.03.014>
- [18] JEON, J. M. and PARK, B. U. (2020). Additive regression with Hilbertian responses. *Ann. Statist.* **48** 2671–2697. MR4152117 <https://doi.org/10.1214/19-AOS1902>
- [19] JEON, J. M., PARK, B. U. and VAN KEILEGOM, I. (2021). Supplement to “Additive regression for non-Euclidean responses and predictors.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2048SUPP>
- [20] KENT, J. T. (1994). The complex Bingham distribution and shape analysis. *J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. B* **56** 285–299. MR1281934
- [21] KIM, J. S., STAIU, A.-M., MAITY, A., CARROLL, R. J. and RUPPERT, D. (2018). Additive function-on-function regression. *J. Comput. Graph. Statist.* **27** 234–244. MR3788315 <https://doi.org/10.1080/10618600.2017.1356730>
- [22] LANG, R. (1986). A note on the measurability of convex sets. *Arch. Math. (Basel)* **47** 90–92. MR0855142 <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF01202504>
- [23] LE, H. L. and KENDALL, D. G. (1993). The Riemannian structure of Euclidean shape spaces: A novel environment for statistics. *Ann. Statist.* **21** 1225–1271. MR1241266 <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176349259>
- [24] LEE, J. M. (2018). *Introduction to Riemannian Manifolds. Graduate Texts in Mathematics* **176**. Springer, Cham. MR3887684
- [25] LEE, Y. K., MAMMEN, E. and PARK, B. U. (2010). Backfitting and smooth backfitting for additive quantile models. *Ann. Statist.* **38** 2857–2883. MR2722458 <https://doi.org/10.1214/10-AOS808>
- [26] LEE, Y. K., MAMMEN, E. and PARK, B. U. (2012). Flexible generalized varying coefficient regression models. *Ann. Statist.* **40** 1906–1933. MR3015048 <https://doi.org/10.1214/12-AOS1026>
- [27] LIN, Z. and YAO, F. (2019). Intrinsic Riemannian functional data analysis. *Ann. Statist.* **47** 3533–3577. MR4025751 <https://doi.org/10.1214/18-AOS1787>
- [28] LINTON, O. and NIELSEN, J. P. (1995). A kernel method of estimating structured nonparametric regression based on marginal integration. *Biometrika* **82** 93–100. MR1332841 <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/82.1.93>
- [29] MAMMEN, E., LINTON, O. and NIELSEN, J. (1999). The existence and asymptotic properties of a backfitting projection algorithm under weak conditions. *Ann. Statist.* **27** 1443–1490. MR1742496 <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1017939137>
- [30] MARRON, J. S. and ALONSO, A. M. (2014). Overview of object oriented data analysis. *Biom. J.* **56** 732–753. MR3258083 <https://doi.org/10.1002/bimj.201300072>
- [31] NIELSEN, J. P. and SPERLICH, S. (2005). Smooth backfitting in practice. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **67** 43–61. MR2136638 <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9868.2005.00487.x>
- [32] OPSOMER, J. D. and RUPPERT, D. (1997). Fitting a bivariate additive model by local polynomial regression. *Ann. Statist.* **25** 186–211. MR1429922 <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1034276626>
- [33] PELLETIER, B. (2005). Kernel density estimation on Riemannian manifolds. *Statist. Probab. Lett.* **73** 297–304. MR2179289 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.spl.2005.04.004>
- [34] PELLETIER, B. (2006). Non-parametric regression estimation on closed Riemannian manifolds. *J. Non-parametr. Stat.* **18** 57–67. MR2214065 <https://doi.org/10.1080/10485250500504828>
- [35] PETERSEN, A. and MÜLLER, H.-G. (2019). Fréchet regression for random objects with Euclidean predictors. *Ann. Statist.* **47** 691–719. MR3909947 <https://doi.org/10.1214/17-AOS1624>
- [36] REIMHERR, M., SRIPERUMBUDUR, B. and TAOUFIK, B. (2018). Optimal prediction for additive function-on-function regression. *Electron. J. Stat.* **12** 4571–4601. MR3893421 <https://doi.org/10.1214/18-EJS1505>
- [37] ROSENTHAL, M., WU, W., KLASSEN, E. and SRIVASTAVA, A. (2014). Spherical regression models using projective linear transformations. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **109** 1615–1624. MR3293614 <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2014.892881>

- [38] SAKAI, T. (1996). *Riemannian Geometry. Translations of Mathematical Monographs* **149**. Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI. Translated from the 1992 Japanese original by the author. [MR1390760](#) <https://doi.org/10.1090/mmono/149>
- [39] SCHEIPL, F., STAICU, A.-M. and GREVEN, S. (2015). Functional additive mixed models. *J. Comput. Graph. Statist.* **24** 477–501. [MR3357391](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/10618600.2014.901914>
- [40] SIMÓ, A., IBÁÑEZ, M. V., EPIFANIO, I. and GIMENO, V. (2020). Generalized partially linear models on Riemannian manifolds. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. C. Appl. Stat.* **69** 641–661. [MR4098966](#)
- [41] TU, L. W. (2017). *Differential Geometry*. Springer, Berlin.
- [42] WOOD, S. N. (2017). *Generalized Additive Models: An Introduction with R*. Chapman and Hall/CRC.
- [43] YU, K., PARK, B. U. and MAMMEN, E. (2008). Smooth backfitting in generalized additive models. *Ann. Statist.* **36** 228–260. [MR2387970](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/0090536070000000596>
- [44] YUAN, Y., ZHU, H., LIN, W. and MARRON, J. S. (2012). Local polynomial regression for symmetric positive definite matrices. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **74** 697–719. [MR2965956](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9868.2011.01022.x>

SET STRUCTURED GLOBAL EMPIRICAL RISK MINIMIZERS ARE RATE OPTIMAL IN GENERAL DIMENSIONS

BY QIYANG HAN^{??}

Department of Statistics, Rutgers University, ^{??}qh85@stat.rutgers.edu

Entropy integrals are widely used as a powerful empirical process tool to obtain upper bounds for the rates of convergence of global empirical risk minimizers (ERMs), in standard settings such as density estimation and regression. The upper bound for the convergence rates thus obtained typically matches the minimax lower bound when the entropy integral converges, but admits a strict gap compared to the lower bound when it diverges. Birgé and Massart (*Probab. Theory Related Fields* **97** (1993) 113–150) provided a striking example showing that such a gap is real with the entropy structure alone: for a variant of the natural Hölder class with low regularity, the global ERM actually converges at the rate predicted by the entropy integral that substantially deviates from the lower bound. The counter-example has spawned a long-standing negative position on the use of global ERMs in the regime where the entropy integral diverges, as they are heuristically believed to converge at a suboptimal rate in a variety of models.

The present paper demonstrates that this gap can be closed if the models admit certain degree of “set structures” in addition to the entropy structure. In other words, the global ERMs in such set structured models will indeed be rate-optimal, matching the lower bound even when the entropy integral diverges. The models with set structures we investigate include (i) image and edge estimation, (ii) binary classification, (iii) multiple isotonic regression, (iv) s -concave density estimation, all in general dimensions when the entropy integral diverges. Here, set structures are interpreted broadly in the sense that the complexity of the underlying models can be essentially captured by the size of the empirical process over certain class of measurable sets, for which matching upper and lower bounds are obtained to facilitate the derivation of sharp convergence rates for the associated global ERMs.

REFERENCES

- [1] BARAUD, Y. (2016). Bounding the expectation of the supremum of an empirical process over a (weak) VC-major class. *Electron. J. Stat.* **10** 1709–1728. [MR3522658](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/15-EJS1055>
- [2] BARRON, A., BIRGÉ, L. and MASSART, P. (1999). Risk bounds for model selection via penalization. *Probab. Theory Related Fields* **113** 301–413. [MR1679028](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s0044000050210>
- [3] BIRGÉ, L. (1983). Approximation dans les espaces métriques et théorie de l’estimation. *Z. Wahrsch. Verw. Gebiete* **65** 181–237. [MR0722129](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00532480>
- [4] BIRGÉ, L. and MASSART, P. (1993). Rates of convergence for minimum contrast estimators. *Probab. Theory Related Fields* **97** 113–150. [MR1240719](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF01199316>
- [5] BRUNEL, V.-E. (2013). Adaptive estimation of convex polytopes and convex sets from noisy data. *Electron. J. Stat.* **7** 1301–1327. [MR3063609](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/13-EJS804>
- [6] CARPENTER, T., DIAKONIKOLAS, I., SIDIROPOULOS, A. and STEWART, A. (2018). Near-optimal sample complexity bounds for maximum likelihood estimation of multivariate log-concave densities. In *Conference on Learning Theory* 1–29.
- [7] CHATTERJEE, S. (2014). A new perspective on least squares under convex constraint. *Ann. Statist.* **42** 2340–2381. [MR3269982](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1254>
- [8] CHATTERJEE, S., GUNTUBOYINA, A. and SEN, B. (2018). On matrix estimation under monotonicity constraints. *Bernoulli* **24** 1072–1100. [MR3706788](#) <https://doi.org/10.3150/16-BEJ865>

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 60E15; secondary 62G05.

Key words and phrases. Empirical risk minimization, empirical process, classification, nonparametric regression, density estimation, non-Donsker.

- [9] DAGAN, Y. and KUR, G. (2019). The log-concave maximum likelihood estimator is optimal in high dimensions. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1903.05315](https://arxiv.org/abs/1903.05315).
- [10] DEVROYE, L., GYÖRFI, L. and LUGOSI, G. (1996). *A Probabilistic Theory of Pattern Recognition. Applications of Mathematics (New York)* **31**. Springer, New York. MR1383093 <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4612-0711-5>
- [11] DOSS, C. R. and WELLNER, J. A. (2016). Global rates of convergence of the MLEs of log-concave and s -concave densities. *Ann. Statist.* **44** 954–981. MR3485950 <https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AOS1394>
- [12] DUDLEY, R. M. (1982). Empirical and Poisson processes on classes of sets or functions too large for central limit theorems. *Z. Wahrsch. Verw. Gebiete* **61** 355–368. MR0679680 <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00539835>
- [13] DUDLEY, R. M. (2014). *Uniform Central Limit Theorems*, 2nd ed. *Cambridge Studies in Advanced Mathematics* **142**. Cambridge Univ. Press, New York. MR3445285
- [14] GAO, F. and WELLNER, J. A. (2007). Entropy estimate for high-dimensional monotonic functions. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **98** 1751–1764. MR2392431 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2006.09.003>
- [15] GINÉ, E. and KOLTCHINSKII, V. (2006). Concentration inequalities and asymptotic results for ratio type empirical processes. *Ann. Probab.* **34** 1143–1216. MR2243881 <https://doi.org/10.1214/009117906000000070>
- [16] GINÉ, E. and NICKL, R. (2016). *Mathematical Foundations of Infinite-Dimensional Statistical Models. Cambridge Series in Statistical and Probabilistic Mathematics*. Cambridge Univ. Press, New York. MR3588285 <https://doi.org/10.1017/CBO9781107337862>
- [17] GRENDER, U. (1981). *Abstract Inference*. Wiley, New York. MR0599175
- [18] GUNTUBOYINA, A. (2012). Optimal rates of convergence for convex set estimation from support functions. *Ann. Statist.* **40** 385–411. MR3014311 <https://doi.org/10.1214/11-AOS959>
- [19] HAN, Q. (2021). Supplement to “Set structured global empirical risk minimizers are rate optimal in general dimensions.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2049SUPP>.
- [20] HAN, Q., WANG, T., CHATTERJEE, S. and SAMWORTH, R. J. (2019). Isotonic regression in general dimensions. *Ann. Statist.* **47** 2440–2471. MR3988762 <https://doi.org/10.1214/18-AOS1753>
- [21] HAN, Q. and WELLNER, J. A. (2016). Approximation and estimation of s -concave densities via Rényi divergences. *Ann. Statist.* **44** 1332–1359. MR3485962 <https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AOS1408>
- [22] HAN, Q. and WELLNER, J. A. (2019). Convergence rates of least squares regression estimators with heavy-tailed errors. *Ann. Statist.* **47** 2286–2319. MR3953452 <https://doi.org/10.1214/18-AOS1748>
- [23] KIM, A. K. H. and SAMWORTH, R. J. (2016). Global rates of convergence in log-concave density estimation. *Ann. Statist.* **44** 2756–2779. MR3576560 <https://doi.org/10.1214/16-AOS1480>
- [24] KOLTCHINSKII, V. (2006). Local Rademacher complexities and oracle inequalities in risk minimization. *Ann. Statist.* **34** 2593–2656. MR2329442 <https://doi.org/10.1214/009053606000001019>
- [25] KOROSTEL'EV, A. P. and TSYBAKOV, A. B. (1992). Asymptotically minimax image reconstruction problems. In *Topics in Nonparametric Estimation. Adv. Soviet Math.* **12** 45–86. Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI. MR1191691 <https://doi.org/10.1137/1136015>
- [26] KOROSTEL'EV, A. P. and TSYBAKOV, A. B. (1993). *Minimax Theory of Image Reconstruction. Lecture Notes in Statistics* **82**. Springer, New York. MR1226450 <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4612-2712-0>
- [27] KUR, G., GAO, F., GUNTUBOYINA, A. and SEN, B. (2020). Convex regression in multidimensions: Sub-optimality of least squares estimators. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:2006.02044](https://arxiv.org/abs/2006.02044).
- [28] LECAM, L. (1973). Convergence of estimates under dimensionality restrictions. *Ann. Statist.* **1** 38–53. MR0334381
- [29] LECUÉ, G. (2007). Simultaneous adaptation to the margin and to complexity in classification. *Ann. Statist.* **35** 1698–1721. MR2351102 <https://doi.org/10.1214/009053607000000055>
- [30] MAMMEN, E. and TSYBAKOV, A. B. (1995). Asymptotical minimax recovery of sets with smooth boundaries. *Ann. Statist.* **23** 502–524. MR1332579 <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176324533>
- [31] MAMMEN, E. and TSYBAKOV, A. B. (1999). Smooth discrimination analysis. *Ann. Statist.* **27** 1808–1829. MR1765618 <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1017939240>
- [32] MASSART, P. and NÉDÉLEC, É. (2006). Risk bounds for statistical learning. *Ann. Statist.* **34** 2326–2366. MR2291502 <https://doi.org/10.1214/0090536060000000786>
- [33] OSSIANDER, M. (1987). A central limit theorem under metric entropy with L_2 bracketing. *Ann. Probab.* **15** 897–919. MR0893905
- [34] POLLARD, D. (2002). Maximal inequalities via bracketing with adaptive truncation. *Ann. Inst. Henri Poincaré Probab. Stat.* **38** 1039–1052. MR1955351 [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0246-0203\(02\)01138-X](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0246-0203(02)01138-X)
- [35] ROBERTSON, T., WRIGHT, F. T. and DYKSTRA, R. L. (1988). *Order Restricted Statistical Inference. Wiley Series in Probability and Mathematical Statistics: Probability and Mathematical Statistics*. Wiley, Chichester. MR0961262

- [36] SAUMARD, A. (2012). Optimal upper and lower bounds for the true and empirical excess risks in heteroscedastic least-squares regression. *Electron. J. Stat.* **6** 579–655. [MR2988421](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/12-EJS679>
- [37] SEREGIN, A. and WELLNER, J. A. (2010). Nonparametric estimation of multivariate convex-transformed densities. *Ann. Statist.* **38** 3751–3781. [MR2766867](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/10-AOS840>
- [38] TSYBAKOV, A. B. (2004). Optimal aggregation of classifiers in statistical learning. *Ann. Statist.* **32** 135–166. [MR2051002](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1079120131>
- [39] VAN DE GEER, S. (1987). A new approach to least-squares estimation, with applications. *Ann. Statist.* **15** 587–602. [MR0888427](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176350362>
- [40] VAN DE GEER, S. (1990). Estimating a regression function. *Ann. Statist.* **18** 907–924. [MR1056343](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176347632>
- [41] VAN DE GEER, S. (1993). Hellinger-consistency of certain nonparametric maximum likelihood estimators. *Ann. Statist.* **21** 14–44. [MR1212164](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176349013>
- [42] VAN DE GEER, S. (1995). The method of sieves and minimum contrast estimators. *Math. Methods Statist.* **4** 20–38. [MR1324688](#)
- [43] VAN DE GEER, S. and WAINWRIGHT, M. J. (2017). On concentration for (regularized) empirical risk minimization. *Sankhya A* **79** 159–200. [MR3707417](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s13171-017-0111-9>
- [44] VAN DE GEER, S. A. (2000). *Applications of Empirical Process Theory*. *Cambridge Series in Statistical and Probabilistic Mathematics* **6**. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge. [MR1739079](#)
- [45] VAN DER VAART, A. (1996). Efficient maximum likelihood estimation in semiparametric mixture models. *Ann. Statist.* **24** 862–878. [MR1394993](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1032894470>
- [46] VAN DER VAART, A. (1996). New Donsker classes. *Ann. Probab.* **24** 2128–2140. [MR1415244](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aop/1041903221>
- [47] VAN DER VAART, A. W. and WELLNER, J. A. (1996). *Weak Convergence and Empirical Processes*. *Springer Series in Statistics*. Springer, New York. [MR1385671](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4757-2545-2>
- [48] WONG, W. H. and SHEN, X. (1995). Probability inequalities for likelihood ratios and convergence rates of sieve MLEs. *Ann. Statist.* **23** 339–362. [MR1332570](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176324524>
- [49] YANG, Y. and BARRON, A. (1999). Information-theoretic determination of minimax rates of convergence. *Ann. Statist.* **27** 1564–1599. [MR1742500](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1017939142>

EMPIRICAL TAIL COPULAS FOR FUNCTIONAL DATA

BY JOHN H. J. EINMAHL^{1,??} AND JOHAN SEGERS^{2,??}

¹*Department of Econometrics and OR and CentER, Tilburg University, ??j.h.j.einmahl@uvt.nl*

²*LIDAM/ISBA, UCLouvain, ??johan.segers@uclouvain.be*

For multivariate distributions in the domain of attraction of a max-stable distribution, the tail copula and the stable tail dependence function are equivalent ways to capture the dependence in the upper tail. The empirical versions of these functions are rank-based estimators whose inflated estimation errors are known to converge weakly to a Gaussian process that is similar in structure to the weak limit of the empirical copula process. We extend this multivariate result to continuous functional data by establishing the asymptotic normality of the estimators of the tail copula, uniformly over all finite subsets of at most D points (D fixed). An application for testing tail copula stationarity is presented. The main tool for deriving the result is the uniform asymptotic normality of all the D -variate tail empirical processes. The proof of the main result is nonstandard.

REFERENCES

- AZZALINI, A. and GENZ, A. (2020). The R package `mnormt`: The multivariate normal and t distributions (version 2.0.2).
- BÜCHER, A. and DETTE, H. (2013). Multiplier bootstrap of tail copulas with applications. *Bernoulli* **19** 1655–1687. [MR3129029](#) <https://doi.org/10.3150/12-BEJ425>
- CHIAPINO, M., SABOURIN, A. and SEGERS, J. (2019). Identifying groups of variables with the potential of being large simultaneously. *Extremes* **22** 193–222. [MR3949044](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10687-018-0339-3>
- COLES, S. G. (1993). Regional modelling of extreme storms via max-stable processes. *J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. B* **55** 797–816. [MR1229882](#)
- DE HAAN, L. and LIN, T. (2001). On convergence toward an extreme value distribution in $C[0, 1]$. *Ann. Probab.* **29** 467–483. [MR1825160](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aop/1008956340>
- DE HAAN, L. and LIN, T. (2003). Weak consistency of extreme value estimators in $C[0, 1]$. *Ann. Statist.* **31** 1996–2012. [MR2036397](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1074290334>
- DOMBRY, C. (2017). Personal communication.
- DOMBRY, C. and RIBATET, M. (2015). Functional regular variations, Pareto processes and peaks over threshold. *Stat. Interface* **8** 9–17. [MR3320385](#) <https://doi.org/10.4310/SII.2015.v8.n1.a2>
- DOMBRY, C., RIBATET, M. and STOEVE, S. (2018). Probabilities of concurrent extremes. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **113** 1565–1582. [MR3902230](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2017.1356318>
- DREES, H. and HUANG, X. (1998). Best attainable rates of convergence for estimators of the stable tail dependence function. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **64** 25–47. [MR1619974](#) <https://doi.org/10.1006/jmva.1997.1708>
- EINMAHL, J. H. J., GANTNER, M. and SAWITZKI, G. (2010). Asymptotics of the shorth plot. *J. Statist. Plann. Inference* **140** 3003–3012. [MR2659831](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jspi.2010.03.041>
- EINMAHL, J. H. J., KIRILIOUK, A. and SEGERS, J. (2018). A continuous updating weighted least squares estimator of tail dependence in high dimensions. *Extremes* **21** 205–233. [MR3800297](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10687-017-0303-7>
- EINMAHL, J. H. J., KRAJINA, A. and SEGERS, J. (2012). An M -estimator for tail dependence in arbitrary dimensions. *Ann. Statist.* **40** 1764–1793. [MR3015043](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/12-AOS1023>
- EINMAHL, J. H. J. and LIN, T. (2006). Asymptotic normality of extreme value estimators on $C[0, 1]$. *Ann. Statist.* **34** 469–492. [MR2275250](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/009053605000000831>
- EINMAHL, J. H. J. and SEGERS, J. (2021). Supplement to “Empirical tail copulas for functional data.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2050SUPP>.

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62M99, 62G05, 62G20, 62G30, 62G32; secondary 60F17, 60G70.

Key words and phrases. Extreme value statistics, functional data, tail empirical process, tail dependence, tail copula estimation, uniform asymptotic normality.

- FALK, M. (2019). *Multivariate Extreme Value Theory and D-Norms*. Springer Series in Operations Research and Financial Engineering. Springer, Cham. MR3890054 <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-030-03819-9>
- FERREIRA, A. and DE HAAN, L. (2014). The generalized Pareto process; with a view towards application and simulation. *Bernoulli* **20** 1717–1737. MR3263087 <https://doi.org/10.3150/13-BEJ538>
- GINÉ, E., HAHN, M. G. and VATAN, P. (1990). Max-infinitely divisible and max-stable sample continuous processes. *Probab. Theory Related Fields* **87** 139–165. MR1080487 <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF01198427>
- GOMES, M. I., DE HAAN, L. and PESTANA, D. (2004). Joint exceedances of the ARCH process. *J. Appl. Probab.* **41** 919–926. MR2074832 <https://doi.org/10.1017/s0021900200020635>
- GUDENDORF, G. and SEGERS, J. (2012). Nonparametric estimation of multivariate extreme-value copulas. *J. Statist. Plann. Inference* **142** 3073–3085. MR2956794 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jspi.2012.05.007>
- HÜSLER, J. and REISS, R.-D. (1989). Maxima of normal random vectors: Between independence and complete dependence. *Statist. Probab. Lett.* **7** 283–286. MR0980699 [https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-7152\(89\)90106-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-7152(89)90106-5)
- KABLUCHKO, Z., SCHLATHER, M. and DE HAAN, L. (2009). Stationary max-stable fields associated to negative definite functions. *Ann. Probab.* **37** 2042–2065. MR2561440 <https://doi.org/10.1214/09-AOP455>
- KOCH, E. (2017). Spatial risk measures and applications to max-stable processes. *Extremes* **20** 635–670. MR3679985 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10687-016-0274-0>
- MERCADIER, C. and ROUSTANT, O. (2019). The tail dependograph. *Extremes* **22** 343–372. MR3949049 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10687-019-00345-3>
- NIKOLOULOPOULOS, A. K., JOE, H. and LI, H. (2009). Extreme value properties of multivariate t copulas. *Extremes* **12** 129–148. MR2515644 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10687-008-0072-4>
- PENG, L. and QI, Y. (2008). Bootstrap approximation of tail dependence function. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **99** 1807–1824. MR2444820 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2008.01.018>
- R CORE TEAM (2018). R: A language and environment for statistical computing. R Foundation for Statistical Computing, Vienna, Austria.
- RESSEL, P. (2013). Homogeneous distributions—and a spectral representation of classical mean values and stable tail dependence functions. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **117** 246–256. MR3053546 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2013.02.013>
- RIBATET, M. (2020). SpatialExtremes: Modelling spatial extremes. R package version 2.0-9.
- RUYMGAART, F. H. (1973). *Asymptotic Theory of Rank Tests for Independence*. Mathematisch Centrum, Amsterdam Mathematical Centre Tracts, 43. MR0324816
- SCHLATHER, M. (2002). Models for stationary max-stable random fields. *Extremes* **5** 33–44. MR1947786 <https://doi.org/10.1023/A:1020977924878>
- SCHMIDT, R. and STADTMÜLLER, U. (2006). Non-parametric estimation of tail dependence. *Scand. J. Stat.* **33** 307–335. MR2279645 <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9469.2005.00483.x>
- SEGERS, J. (2012). Asymptotics of empirical copula processes under non-restrictive smoothness assumptions. *Bernoulli* **18** 764–782. MR2948900 <https://doi.org/10.3150/11-BEJ387>
- SMITH, R. L. (1990). Max-stable processes and spatial extremes. Unpublished manuscript.
- VAN DER VAART, A. W. (1998). *Asymptotic Statistics*. Cambridge Series in Statistical and Probabilistic Mathematics **3**. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge. MR1652247 <https://doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511802256>
- VAN DER VAART, A. W. and WELLNER, J. A. (1996). *Weak Convergence and Empirical Processes: With Applications to Statistics*. Springer Series in Statistics. Springer, New York. MR1385671 <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4757-2545-2>

INFERENCE FOR A TWO-STAGE ENRICHMENT DESIGN

BY ZHANTAO LIN^{1,*}, NANCY FLOURNOY^{2,??} AND WILLIAM F. ROSENBERGER^{1,†}

¹Department of Statistics, George Mason University, *zlin4@masonlive.gmu.edu, †wrosenbe@gmu.edu

²Department of Statistics, University of Missouri, Columbia, ??fournoy@missouri.edu

Two-stage enrichment designs can be used to target the benefiting population in clinical trials based on patients' biomarkers. In the case of continuous biomarkers, we show that using a bivariate model that treats biomarkers as random variables more accurately identifies a treatment-benefiting enriched population than assuming biomarkers are fixed. Additionally, we show that under the bivariate model, the maximum likelihood estimators (MLEs) follow a randomly scaled mixture of normal distributions. Using random normings, we obtain asymptotically standard normal MLEs and construct hypothesis tests. Finally, in a simulation study, we demonstrate that our proposed design is more powerful than a single stage design when outcomes and biomarkers are correlated; the model-based estimators have smaller bias and mean square error (MSE) than weighted average estimators.

REFERENCES

- ALDOUS, D. J. and EAGLESON, G. K. (1978). On mixing and stability of limit theorems. *Ann. Probab.* **6** 325–331. [MR0517416 https://doi.org/10.1214/aop/1176995577](https://doi.org/10.1214/aop/1176995577)
- AUDEH, M. W., CARMICHAEL, J., PENSON, R. T., FRIEDLANDER, M., POWELL, B., BELL-MCGUINN, K. M., SCOTT, C., WEITZEL, J. N., OAKNIN, A. et al. (2010). Oral poly (ADP-ribose) polymerase inhibitor olaparib in patients with BRCA1 or BRCA2 mutations and recurrent ovarian cancer: A proof-of-concept trial. *Lancet* **376** 245–251.
- BARNDORFF-NIELSEN, O. E. and SØRENSEN, M. (1994). A review of some aspects of asymptotic likelihood theory for stochastic processes. *Int. Stat. Rev.* **62** 133–165.
- CHAPMAN, P. B., HAUSCHILD, A., ROBERT, C., HAANEN, J. B., ASCIERTO, P., LARKIN, J., DUMMER, R., GARBE, C., TESTORI, A. et al. (2011). Improved survival with vemurafenib in melanoma with BRAF V600E mutation. *N. Engl. J. Med.* **364** 2507–2516.
- CRAMÉR, H. (1946). *Mathematical Methods of Statistics. Princeton Mathematical Series, Vol. 9.* Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton, NJ. [MR0016588](https://doi.org/10.2307/2344968)
- FERGUSON, T. S. (1996). *A Course in Large Sample Theory. Texts in Statistical Science Series.* CRC Press, London. [MR1699953 https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4899-4549-5](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4899-4549-5)
- FLOURNOY, N., MAY, C. and TOMMASI, C. (in press). The effects of adaptation on maximum likelihood inference for nonlinear models with normal errors. *J. Statist. Plann. Inference.* <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jspi.2021.02.002>
- FONG, P. C., BOSS, D. S., YAP, T. A., TUTT, A., WU, P., MERGUI-ROELVINK, M., MORTIMER, P., SWAISLAND, H., LAU, A. et al. (2009). Inhibition of poly (ADP-ribose) polymerase in tumors from BRCA mutation carriers. *N. Engl. J. Med.* **361** 123–134.
- FRIEDE, T., PARSONS, N. and STALLARD, N. (2012). A conditional error function approach for subgroup selection in adaptive clinical trials. *Stat. Med.* **31** 4309–4320. [MR3040083 https://doi.org/10.1002/sim.5541](https://doi.org/10.1002/sim.5541)
- HALL, P. and HEYDE, C. C. (1980). *Martingale Limit Theory and Its Application.* Academic Press, New York.
- HÄUSLER, E. and LUSCHGY, H. (2015). *Stable Convergence and Stable Limit Theorems. Probability Theory and Stochastic Modelling* **74.** Springer, Cham. [MR3362567 https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-319-18329-9](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-319-18329-9)
- HOLGERSSON, H. E. T., NORDSTRÖM, L. and ÖNER, Ö. (2014). Dummy variables vs. category-wise models. *J. Appl. Stat.* **41** 233–241. [MR3291232 https://doi.org/10.1080/02664763.2013.838665](https://doi.org/10.1080/02664763.2013.838665)
- JENNISON, C. and TURNBULL, B. W. (2007). Adaptive seamless designs: Selection and prospective testing of hypotheses. *J. Biopharm. Statist.* **17** 1135–1161. [MR2414567 https://doi.org/10.1080/10543400701645215](https://doi.org/10.1080/10543400701645215)

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62L05, 62K99, 62F12; secondary 62E20, 60F05, 60G52.

Key words and phrases. Adaptive designs, design of experiments, inference for stochastic processes, precision medicine, random biomarker, threshold determination.

- LANE, A. and FLOURNOY, N. (2012). Two-stage adaptive optimal design with fixed first-stage sample size. *J. Probab. Stat.* **15** Art. ID 436239. MR2988297 <https://doi.org/10.1155/2012/436239>
- LANE, A., YAO, P. and FLOURNOY, N. (2014). Information in a two-stage adaptive optimal design. *J. Statist. Plann. Inference* **144** 173–187. MR3131372 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jspi.2013.07.010>
- LEHMANN, E. L. (1999). *Elements of Large-Sample Theory*. Springer Texts in Statistics. Springer, New York. MR1663158 <https://doi.org/10.1007/b98855>
- LIN, Z., FLOURNOY, N. and ROSENBERGER, W. F. (2020). Random norming aids analysis of non-linear regression models with sequential informative dose selection. *J. Statist. Plann. Inference* **206** 29–42. MR4036693 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jspi.2019.09.003>
- MAITOURNAM, A. and SIMON, R. (2005). On the efficiency of targeted clinical trials. *Stat. Med.* **24** 329–339. MR2134510 <https://doi.org/10.1002/sim.1975>
- MANDREKAR, S. J. and SARGENT, D. J. (2009). Clinical trial designs for predictive biomarker validation: Theoretical considerations and practical challenges. *J. Clin. Oncol.* **27** 4027.
- PRAKASA RAO, B. L. S. (2009). Conditional independence, conditional mixing and conditional association. *Ann. Inst. Statist. Math.* **61** 441–460. MR2505397 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10463-007-0152-2>
- RÉNYI, A. (1963). On stable sequences of events. *Sankhyā Ser. A* **25** 293–302. MR0170385
- ROSENBLUM, M., FANG, E. X. and LIU, H. (2020). Optimal, two-stage, adaptive enrichment designs for randomized trials, using sparse linear programming. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **82** 749–772. MR4112783 <https://doi.org/10.1111/rssb.12366>
- ROSENBLUM, M. and VAN DER LAAN, M. J. (2011). Optimizing randomized trial designs to distinguish which subpopulations benefit from treatment. *Biometrika* **98** 845–860. MR2860328 <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asr055>
- ROSSET, S. and TIBSHIRANI, R. J. (2020). From Fixed-X to Random-X regression: Bias-variance decompositions, covariance penalties, and prediction error estimation. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **115** 138–151. MR4078450 <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2018.1424632>
- RUSSEK-COHEN, E. and SIMON, R. M. (1997). Evaluating treatments when a gender by treatment interaction may exist. *Stat. Med.* **16** 455–464.
- SCHEPERS, J. (2016). On regression modelling with dummy variables versus separate regressions per group: Comment on Holgersson et al. *J. Appl. Stat.* **43** 674–681.
- SIMON, N. (2015). Adaptive enrichment designs: Applications and challenges. *Clin. Invest.* **5** 383–391.
- SIMON, R. and MAITOURNAM, A. (2004). Evaluating the efficiency of targeted designs for randomized clinical trials. *Clin. Cancer Res.* **10** 6759–6763.
- SIMON, N. and SIMON, R. (2013). Adaptive enrichment designs for clinical trials. *Biostatistics* **14** 613–625.
- SIMON, R. and SIMON, N. (2017). Inference for multimarker adaptive enrichment trials. *Stat. Med.* **36** 4083–4093. MR3713651 <https://doi.org/10.1002/sim.7422>
- SPENCER, A. V., HARBRON, C., MANDER, A., WASON, J. and PEERS, I. (2016). An adaptive design for updating the threshold value of a continuous biomarker. *Stat. Med.* **35** 4909–4923. MR3569903 <https://doi.org/10.1002/sim.7042>
- STALLARD, N., HAMBORG, T., PARSONS, N. and FRIEDE, T. (2014). Adaptive designs for confirmatory clinical trials with subgroup selection. *J. Biopharm. Statist.* **24** 168–187. MR3196133 <https://doi.org/10.1080/10543406.2013.857238>
- TARIMA, S. and FLOURNOY, N. (2019). Asymptotic properties of maximum likelihood estimators with sample size recalculation. *Statist. Papers* **60** 23–44. MR3969035 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s00362-019-01095-x>
- VAN DER VAART, A. W. (2000). *Asymptotic Statistics*. Cambridge Series in Statistical and Probabilistic Mathematics **3**. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge.
- WANG, S.-J., HUNG, H. M. J. and O’NEILL, R. T. (2009). Adaptive patient enrichment designs in therapeutic trials. *Biom. J.* **51** 358–374. MR2668689 <https://doi.org/10.1002/bimj.200900003>
- WANG, S.-J., O’NEILL, R. T. and HUNG, H. J. (2007). Approaches to evaluation of treatment effect in randomized clinical trials with genomic subset. *Pharm. Stat.* **6** 227–244.
- ZHANG, Z., CHEN, R., SOON, G. and ZHANG, H. (2018). Treatment evaluation for a data-driven subgroup in adaptive enrichment designs of clinical trials. *Stat. Med.* **37** 1–11. MR3738057 <https://doi.org/10.1002/sim.7497>

EXISTENCE AND UNIQUENESS OF THE KRONECKER COVARIANCE MLE

BY MATHIAS DRTON^{1,??}, SATOSHI KURIKI^{2,??} AND PETER HOFF^{3,??}

¹*Department of Mathematics, Technical University of Munich, ?? mathias.drton@tum.de*

²*The Institute of Statistical Mathematics, ?? kuriki@ism.ac.jp*

³*Department of Statistical Science, Duke University, ?? peter.hoff@duke.edu*

In matrix-valued datasets the sampled matrices often exhibit correlations among both their rows and their columns. A useful and parsimonious model of such dependence is the matrix normal model, in which the covariances among the elements of a random matrix are parameterized in terms of the Kronecker product of two covariance matrices, one representing row covariances and one representing column covariance. An appealing feature of such a matrix normal model is that the Kronecker covariance structure allows for standard likelihood inference even when only a very small number of data matrices is available. For instance, in some cases a likelihood ratio test of dependence may be performed with a sample size of one. However, more generally the sample size required to ensure boundedness of the matrix normal likelihood or the existence of a unique maximizer depends in a complicated way on the matrix dimensions. This motivates the study of how large a sample size is needed to ensure that maximum likelihood estimators exist, and exist uniquely with probability one. Our main result gives precise sample size thresholds in the paradigm where the number of rows and the number of columns of the data matrices differ by at most a factor of two. Our proof uses invariance properties that allow us to consider data matrices in canonical form, as obtained from the Kronecker canonical form for matrix pencils.

REFERENCES

- [1] ALLEN, G. I. and TIBSHIRANI, R. (2010). Transposable regularized covariance models with an application to missing data imputation. *Ann. Appl. Stat.* **4** 764–790. [MR2758420](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/09-AOS314>
- [2] ALLEN, G. I. and TIBSHIRANI, R. (2012). Inference with transposable data: Modelling the effects of row and column correlations. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **74** 721–743. [MR2965957](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9868.2011.01027.x>
- [3] AMÉNDOLA, C., KOHN, K., REICHENBACH, P. and SEIGAL, A. (2020). Invariant theory and scaling algorithms for maximum likelihood estimation.
- [4] ANDERSON, T. W. (2003). *An Introduction to Multivariate Statistical Analysis*, 3rd ed. Wiley Series in Probability and Statistics. Wiley Interscience, Hoboken, NJ. [MR1990662](#)
- [5] CHEN, X. and LIU, W. (2019). Graph estimation for matrix-variate Gaussian data. *Statist. Sinica* **29** 479–504. [MR3889377](#)
- [6] DAWID, A. P. (1981). Some matrix-variate distribution theory: Notational considerations and a Bayesian application. *Biometrika* **68** 265–274. [MR0614963](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/68.1.265>
- [7] DERKSEN, H. and MAKAM, V. (2020). Maximum likelihood estimation for matrix normal models via quiver representations.
- [8] DRTON, M., FOX, C., KÄUFL, A. and POULIOT, G. (2019). The maximum likelihood threshold of a path diagram. *Ann. Statist.* **47** 1536–1553. [MR3911121](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/18-AOS1724>
- [9] DUTILLEUL, P. (1999). The mle algorithm for the matrix normal distribution. *J. Stat. Comput. Simul.* **64** 105–123. <https://doi.org/10.1080/00949659908811970>
- [10] EDELMAN, A., ELMROTH, E. and KÄGSTROM, B. (1997). A geometric approach to perturbation theory of matrices and matrix pencils. I. Versal deformations. *SIAM J. Matrix Anal. Appl.* **18** 653–692. [MR1453545](#) <https://doi.org/10.1137/S0895479895284634>

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62H12; secondary 62R01.

Key words and phrases. Gaussian distribution, Kronecker canonical form, matrix normal model, maximum likelihood estimation, separable covariance.

- [11] EFRON, B. (2009). Are a set of microarrays independent of each other? *Ann. Appl. Stat.* **3** 922–942. [MR2750220 https://doi.org/10.1214/09-AOAS236](https://doi.org/10.1214/09-AOAS236)
- [12] FOSDICK, B. K. and HOFF, P. D. (2014). Separable factor analysis with applications to mortality data. *Ann. Appl. Stat.* **8** 120–147. [MR3191985 https://doi.org/10.1214/13-AOAS694](https://doi.org/10.1214/13-AOAS694)
- [13] GLANZ, H. and CARVALHO, L. (2018). An expectation-maximization algorithm for the matrix normal distribution with an application in remote sensing. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **167** 31–48. [MR3830632 https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2018.03.010](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2018.03.010)
- [14] GREENEWALD, K. and HERO, A. O. III (2015). Robust Kronecker product PCA for spatio-temporal covariance estimation. *IEEE Trans. Signal Process.* **63** 6368–6378. [MR3421045 https://doi.org/10.1109/TSP.2015.2472364](https://doi.org/10.1109/TSP.2015.2472364)
- [15] GROSS, E. and SULLIVANT, S. (2018). The maximum likelihood threshold of a graph. *Bernoulli* **24** 386–407. [MR3706762 https://doi.org/10.3150/16-BEJ881](https://doi.org/10.3150/16-BEJ881)
- [16] KOCH, D., LELE, S. and LEWIS, M. A. (2020). Computationally simple anisotropic lattice covariograms. *Environ. Ecol. Stat.* **27** 665–688.
- [17] LANDSBERG, J. M. (2012). *Tensors: Geometry and Applications. Graduate Studies in Mathematics* **128**. Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI. [MR2865915 https://doi.org/10.1090/gsm/128](https://doi.org/10.1090/gsm/128)
- [18] MAKEIG, S., KOTHE, C., MULLEN, T., BIGDELY-SHAMLO, N., ZHANG, Z. and KREUTZ-DELGADO, K. (2012). Evolving signal processing for brain–computer interfaces. *Proc. IEEE* **100** 1567–1584.
- [19] MUIRHEAD, R. J. (1982). *Aspects of Multivariate Statistical Theory. Wiley Series in Probability and Mathematical Statistics*. Wiley, New York. [MR0652932 https://doi.org/10.1002/9781118133263](https://doi.org/10.1002/9781118133263)
- [20] MUROTA, K. (2000). *Matrices and Matroids for Systems Analysis. Algorithms and Combinatorics* **20**. Springer, Berlin. [MR1739147 https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-642-56812-1](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-642-56812-1)
- [21] OHLSON, M., RAUF AHMAD, M. and VON ROSEN, D. (2013). The multilinear normal distribution: Introduction and some basic properties. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **113** 37–47. [MR2984354 https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2011.05.015](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2011.05.015)
- [22] RAPCSÁK, T. (1997). *Smooth Nonlinear Optimization in $\mathbf{R}^N$. Nonconvex Optimization and Its Applications* **19**. Kluwer Academic, Dordrecht. [MR1480415 https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4615-6357-0](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4615-6357-0)
- [23] SOLOVEYCHIK, I. and TRUSHIN, D. (2016). Gaussian and robust Kronecker product covariance estimation: Existence and uniqueness. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **149** 92–113. [MR3507317 https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2016.04.001](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2016.04.001)
- [24] TEN BERGE, J. M. F. and KIERS, H. A. L. (1999). Simplicity of core arrays in three-way principal component analysis and the typical rank of $p \times q \times 2$ arrays. *Linear Algebra Appl.* **294** 169–179. [MR1693919 https://doi.org/10.1016/S0024-3795\(99\)00057-9](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0024-3795(99)00057-9)
- [25] VOLFOVSKY, A. and HOFF, P. D. (2015). Testing for nodal dependence in relational data matrices. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **110** 1037–1046. [MR3420682 https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2014.965777](https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2014.965777)
- [26] WIESEL, A. (2012). Geodesic convexity and covariance estimation. *IEEE Trans. Signal Process.* **60** 6182–6189. [MR3006411 https://doi.org/10.1109/TSP.2012.2218241](https://doi.org/10.1109/TSP.2012.2218241)
- [27] YIN, J. and LI, H. (2012). Model selection and estimation in the matrix normal graphical model. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **107** 119–140. [MR2890437 https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2012.01.005](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2012.01.005)
- [28] ZHOU, S. (2014). Gemini: Graph estimation with matrix variate normal instances. *Ann. Statist.* **42** 532–562. [MR3210978 https://doi.org/10.1214/13-AOS1187](https://doi.org/10.1214/13-AOS1187)
- [29] ZHU, Y. and LI, L. (2018). Multiple matrix Gaussian graphs estimation. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **80** 927–950. [MR3874304 https://doi.org/10.1111/rssb.12278](https://doi.org/10.1111/rssb.12278)

PREDICTION BOUNDS FOR HIGHER ORDER TOTAL VARIATION REGULARIZED LEAST SQUARES

BY FRANCESCO ORTELLI^{*} AND SARA VAN DE GEER[†]

Seminar for Statistics, ETH Zürich, ^{}fortelli@ethz.ch, [†]vsara@ethz.ch*

We establish adaptive results for trend filtering: least squares estimation with a penalty on the total variation of $(k - 1)$ th order differences. Our approach is based on combining a general oracle inequality for the ℓ_1 -penalized least squares estimator with “interpolating vectors” to upper bound the “effective sparsity.” This allows one to show that the ℓ_1 -penalty on the k th order differences leads to an estimator that can adapt to the number of jumps in the $(k - 1)$ th order differences of the underlying signal or an approximation thereof. We show the result for $k \in \{1, 2, 3, 4\}$ and indicate how it could be derived for general $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

REFERENCES

- BELLONI, A., CHERNOZHUKOV, V. and WANG, L. (2011). Square-root lasso: Pivotal recovery of sparse signals via conic programming. *Biometrika* **98** 791–806. [MR2860324](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asr043>
- BOYER, C., DE CASTRO, Y. and SALMON, J. (2017). Adapting to unknown noise level in sparse deconvolution. *Inf. Inference* **6** 310–348. [MR3764527](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/imaiai/iaw024>
- CANDÈS, E. J. and FERNANDEZ-GRANDA, C. (2014). Towards a mathematical theory of super-resolution. *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.* **67** 906–956. [MR3193963](#) <https://doi.org/10.1002/cpa.21455>
- CANDÈS, E. J. and PLAN, Y. (2011). A probabilistic and RIPless theory of compressed sensing. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **57** 7235–7254. [MR2883653](#) <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2011.2161794>
- CHATTERJEE, S. and GOSWAMI, S. (2019). Adaptive estimation of multivariate piecewise polynomials and bounded variation functions by optimal decision trees. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1911.11562](#).
- DALALYAN, A. S., HEBIRI, M. and LEDERER, J. (2017). On the prediction performance of the Lasso. *Bernoulli* **23** 552–581. [MR3556784](#) <https://doi.org/10.3150/15-BEJ756>
- DONOHOO, D. L. and JOHNSTONE, I. M. (1998). Minimax estimation via wavelet shrinkage. *Ann. Statist.* **26** 879–921. [MR1635414](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1024691081>
- ELAD, M., MILANFAR, P. and RUBINSTEIN, R. (2007). Analysis versus synthesis in signal priors. *Inverse Probl.* **23** 947–968. [MR2329926](#) <https://doi.org/10.1088/0266-5611/23/3/007>
- GUNTUBOYINA, A., LIEU, D., CHATTERJEE, S. and SEN, B. (2020). Adaptive risk bounds in univariate total variation denoising and trend filtering. *Ann. Statist.* **48** 205–229. [MR4065159](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/18-AOS1799>
- KIM, S.-J., KOH, K., BOYD, S. and GORINEVSKY, D. (2009). l_1 trend filtering. *SIAM Rev.* **51** 339–360. [MR2505584](#) <https://doi.org/10.1137/070690274>
- LAURENT, B. and MASSART, P. (2000). Adaptive estimation of a quadratic functional by model selection. *Ann. Statist.* **28** 1302–1338. [MR1805785](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1015957395>
- MAMMEN, E. and VAN DE GEER, S. (1997). Locally adaptive regression splines. *Ann. Statist.* **25** 387–413. [MR1429931](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1034276635>
- ORTELLI, F. and VAN DE GEER, S. (2020a). Adaptive rates for total variation image denoising. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **21** 1–38.
- ORTELLI, F. and VAN DE GEER, S. (2020b). Oracle inequalities for square root analysis estimators with application to total variation penalties. *Inf. Inference* **iaaa002**.
- ORTELLI, F. and VAN DE GEER, S. (2021). Supplement to “Prediction bounds for higher order total variation regularized least squares.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2054SUPP>
- PADILLA, O. H. M. and CHATTERJEE, S. (2020). Adaptive quantile trend filtering. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:2007.07472](#).

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62J05; secondary 62J99.

Key words and phrases. Oracle inequality, projection, compatibility, lasso, analysis, total variation regularization, minimax, Moore–Penrose pseudo inverse.

- QIAN, J. and JIA, J. (2016). On stepwise pattern recovery of the fused Lasso. *Comput. Statist. Data Anal.* **94** 221–237. [MR3412821](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.csda.2015.08.013>
- RUDIN, L. I., OSHER, S. and FATEMI, E. (1992). Nonlinear total variation based noise removal algorithms. *Phys. D* **60** 259–268. [MR3363401](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-2789\(92\)90242-F](https://doi.org/10.1016/0167-2789(92)90242-F)
- SADHANALA, V. and TIBSHIRANI, R. J. (2019). Additive models with trend filtering. *Ann. Statist.* **47** 3032–3068. [MR4025734](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/19-AOS1833>
- SADHANALA, V., WANG, Y.-X., SHARPBACK, J. and TIBSHIRANI, R. (2017). Higher-order total variation classes on grids: Minimax theory and trend filtering methods. In *Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems* 5800–5810.
- STEIDL, G., DIDAS, S. and NEUMANN, J. (2006). Splines in higher order TV regularization. *Int. J. Comput. Vis.* **70** 241–255.
- TANG, G., BHASKAR, B. N. and RECHT, B. (2015). Near minimax line spectral estimation. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **61** 499–512. [MR3299978](#) <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2014.2368122>
- TIBSHIRANI, R. (1996). Regression shrinkage and selection via the lasso. *J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. B* **58** 267–288. [MR1379242](#)
- TIBSHIRANI, R. J. (2014). Adaptive piecewise polynomial estimation via trend filtering. *Ann. Statist.* **42** 285–323. [MR3189487](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/13-AOS1189>
- TIBSHIRANI, R. (2020). Divided differences, falling factorials, and discrete splines: Another look at trend filtering and related problems. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:2003.03886](#).
- VAN DE GEER, S. (2020). Logistic regression with total variation regularization. *Trans. A. Razmadze Math. Inst.* **174** 217–233. [MR4150558](#)
- WANG, Y.-X., SMOLA, A. and TIBSHIRANI, R. (2014). The falling factorial basis and its statistical applications. In *International Conference on Machine Learning* 730–738.
- WANG, Y.-X., SHARPBACK, J., SMOLA, A. J. and TIBSHIRANI, R. J. (2016). Trend filtering on graphs. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **17** Paper No. 105, 41. [MR3543511](#)
- ZHAO, P. and YU, B. (2006). On model selection consistency of Lasso. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **7** 2541–2563. [MR2274449](#)

RECONCILING THE GAUSSIAN AND WHITTLE LIKELIHOOD WITH AN APPLICATION TO ESTIMATION IN THE FREQUENCY DOMAIN

BY SUHASINI SUBBA RAO^{1,??} AND JUNHO YANG^{2,??}

¹Department of Statistics, Texas A&M University, ?? suhasini@stat.tamu.edu

²Institute of Statistical Science, Academia Sinica, ?? junhoyang@stat.sinica.edu.tw

In time series analysis there is an apparent dichotomy between time and frequency domain methods. The aim of this paper is to draw connections between frequency and time domain methods. Our focus will be on reconciling the Gaussian likelihood and the Whittle likelihood. We derive an exact, interpretable, bound between the Gaussian and Whittle likelihood of a second order stationary time series. The derivation is based on obtaining the transformation which is biorthogonal to the discrete Fourier transform of the time series. Such a transformation yields a new decomposition for the inverse of a Toeplitz matrix and enables the representation of the Gaussian likelihood within the frequency domain. We show that the difference between the Gaussian and Whittle likelihood is due to the omission of the best linear predictions outside the domain of observation in the periodogram associated with the Whittle likelihood. Based on this result, we obtain an approximation for the difference between the Gaussian and Whittle likelihoods in terms of the best fitting, finite order autoregressive parameters. These approximations are used to define two new frequency domain quasi-likelihood criteria. We show that these new criteria can yield a better approximation of the spectral divergence criterion, as compared to both the Gaussian and Whittle likelihoods. In simulations, we show that the proposed estimators have satisfactory finite sample properties.

REFERENCES

- ABADIR, K. M., DISTASO, W. and GIRAITIS, L. (2007). Nonstationarity-extended local Whittle estimation. *J. Econometrics* **141** 1353–1384. [MR2413505](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jeconom.2007.01.020>
- BARTLETT, M. S. (1953). Approximate confidence intervals. II. More than one unknown parameter. *Biometrika* **40** 306–317. [MR0059519](#) <https://doi.org/10.2307/2333349>
- BAXTER, G. (1962). An asymptotic result for the finite predictor. *Math. Scand.* **10** 137–144. [MR0149584](#) <https://doi.org/10.7146/math.scand.a-10520>
- BHANSALI, R. J. (1982). The evaluation of certain quadratic forms occurring in autoregressive model fitting. *Ann. Statist.* **10** 121–131. [MR0642724](#)
- BHANSALI, R. J. (1996). Asymptotically efficient autoregressive model selection for multistep prediction. *Ann. Inst. Statist. Math.* **48** 577–602. [MR1424784](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00050857>
- BRILLINGER, D. R. (2001). *Time Series: Data Analysis and Theory. Classics in Applied Mathematics* **36**. SIAM, Philadelphia, PA. [MR1853554](#) <https://doi.org/10.1137/1.9780898719246>
- CHENG, R. and POURAHMADI, M. (1993). Baxter’s inequality and convergence of finite predictors of multivariate stochastic processes. *Probab. Theory Related Fields* **95** 115–124. [MR1207310](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF01197341>
- CHOUDHURI, N., GHOSAL, S. and ROY, A. (2004). Bayesian estimation of the spectral density of a time series. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **99** 1050–1059. [MR2109494](#) <https://doi.org/10.1198/016214504000000557>
- COURSOL, J. and DACUNHA-CASTELLE, D. (1982). Remarques sur l’approximation de la vraisemblance d’un processus gaussien stationnaire. *Teor. Veroyatn. Primen.* **27** 155–160. [MR0645138](#)
- COX, D. R. and SNELL, E. J. (1968). A general definition of residuals. *J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. B* **30** 248–275. [MR0237052](#)

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62M10, 62M15; secondary 62F10.

Key words and phrases. Biorthogonal transforms, discrete Fourier transform, periodogram, quasi-likelihoods, second order stationary time series, Toeplitz inverse.

- DAHLHAUS, R. (1983). Spectral analysis with tapered data. *J. Time Series Anal.* **4** 163–175. <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9892.1983.tb00366.x> **MR0732895**
- DAHLHAUS, R. (1988). Small sample effects in time series analysis: A new asymptotic theory and a new estimate. *Ann. Statist.* **16** 808–841. <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176350838> **MR0947580**
- DAHLHAUS, R. (1990). Nonparametric high resolution spectral estimation. *Probab. Theory Related Fields* **85** 147–180. <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF01277980> **MR1050742**
- DAHLHAUS, R. and KÜNSCH, H. (1987). Edge effects and efficient parameter estimation for stationary random fields. *Biometrika* **74** 877–882. <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/74.4.877> **MR0919857**
- DAS, S., SUBBA RAO, S. and YANG, J. (2021). Spectral methods for small sample time series: A complete periodogram approach. *J. Time Series Anal.*
- FOX, R. and TAQUU, M. S. (1986). Large-sample properties of parameter estimates for strongly dependent stationary Gaussian time series. *Ann. Statist.* **14** 517–532. <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176349936> **MR0840512**
- GALBRAITH, R. F. and GALBRAITH, J. I. (1974). On the inverses of some patterned matrices arising in the theory of stationary time series. *J. Appl. Probab.* **11** 63–71. <https://doi.org/10.1017/s0021900200036408> **MR0365959**
- GIRAITIS, L., KOUL, H. L. and SURGAILIS, D. (2012). *Large Sample Inference for Long Memory Processes*. Imperial College Press, London. <https://doi.org/10.1142/p591> **MR2977317**
- GIRAITIS, L. and ROBINSON, P. M. (2001). Whittle estimation of arch models. *Econometric Theory* **17** 608–631. <https://doi.org/10.1017/S0266466601173056> **MR1841822**
- HURVICH, C. M. and CHEN, W. W. (2000). An efficient taper for potentially overdifferentiated long-memory time series. *J. Time Series Anal.* **21** 155–180. <https://doi.org/10.1111/1467-9892.00179> **MR1771841**
- ING, C.-K. and WEI, C.-Z. (2005). Order selection for same-realization predictions in autoregressive processes. *Ann. Statist.* **33** 2423–2474. <https://doi.org/10.1214/009053605000000525> **MR2211091**
- INOUE, A. and KASAHARA, Y. (2006). Explicit representation of finite predictor coefficients and its applications. *Ann. Statist.* **34** 973–993. <https://doi.org/10.1214/009053606000000209> **MR2283400**
- INOUE, A., KASAHARA, Y. and POURAHMADI, M. (2018). Baxter's inequality for finite predictor coefficients of multivariate long-memory stationary processes. *Bernoulli* **24** 1202–1232. <https://doi.org/10.3150/16-BEJ897> **MR3706792**
- KASAHARA, Y., POURAHMADI, M. and INOUE, A. (2009). Duals of random vectors and processes with applications to prediction problems with missing values. *Statist. Probab. Lett.* **79** 1637–1646. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.spl.2009.04.005> **MR2547424**
- KIRCH, C., EDWARDS, M. C., MEIER, A. and MEYER, R. (2019). Beyond Whittle: Nonparametric correction of a parametric likelihood with a focus on Bayesian time series analysis. *Bayesian Anal.* **14** 1037–1073. <https://doi.org/10.1214/18-BA1126> **MR4044845**
- KLEY, T., PREUSS, P. and FRYZLEWICZ, P. (2019). Predictive, finite-sample model choice for time series under stationarity and non-stationarity. *Electron. J. Stat.* **13** 3710–3774. <https://doi.org/10.1214/19-ejs1606> **MR4013749**
- KREISS, J.-P., PAPARODITIS, E. and POLITIS, D. N. (2011). On the range of validity of the autoregressive sieve bootstrap. *Ann. Statist.* **39** 2103–2130. <https://doi.org/10.1214/11-AOS900> **MR2893863**
- LAHIRI, S. N. (2003). A necessary and sufficient condition for asymptotic independence of discrete Fourier transforms under short- and long-range dependence. *Ann. Statist.* **31** 613–641. <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1051027883> **MR1983544**
- PANARETOS, V. M. and TAVAKOLI, S. (2013). Fourier analysis of stationary time series in function space. *Ann. Statist.* **41** 568–603. <https://doi.org/10.1214/13-AOS1086> **MR3099114**
- PARZEN, E. (1983). Autoregressive spectral estimation. In *Time Series in the Frequency Domain. Handbook of Statist.* **3** 221–247. North-Holland, Amsterdam. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0169-7161\(83\)03013-8](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0169-7161(83)03013-8) **MR0749788**
- PRIESTLEY, M. B. (1981). *Spectral Analysis and Time Series. Vol. 1. Probability and Mathematical Statistics*. Academic Press, London–New York. **MR0628735**
- ROBINSON, P. M. (1995). Gaussian semiparametric estimation of long range dependence. *Ann. Statist.* **23** 1630–1661. <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176324317> **MR1370301**
- SHAMAN, P. (1975). An approximate inverse for the covariance matrix of moving average and autoregressive processes. *Ann. Statist.* **3** 532–538. **MR0362784**
- SHAMAN, P. (1976). Approximations for stationary covariance matrices and their inverses with application to ARMA models. *Ann. Statist.* **4** 292–301. **MR0398033**
- SHAO, X. and WU, W. B. (2007). Local Whittle estimation of fractional integration for nonlinear processes. *Econometric Theory* **23** 899–929. <https://doi.org/10.1017/S0266466607070387> **MR2396737**
- SIDDIQUI, M. M. (1958). On the inversion of the sample covariance matrix in a stationary autoregressive process. *Ann. Math. Stat.* **29** 585–588. <https://doi.org/10.1214/aoms/1177706636> **MR0095568**
- SUBBA RAO, S. (2018). Orthogonal samples for estimators in time series. *J. Time Series Anal.* **39** 313–337. <https://doi.org/10.1111/jtsa.12269> **MR3796522**

- SUBBA RAO, S. and YANG, J. (2021). Supplement to “Reconciling the Gaussian and Whittle likelihood with an application to estimation in the frequency domain.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2055SUPP>
- SYKULSKI, A. M., OLHEDE, S. C., GUILLAUMIN, A. P., LILLY, J. M. and EARLY, J. J. (2019). The debiased Whittle likelihood. *Biometrika* **106** 251–266. [MR3949302 https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asy071](https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asy071)
- SZEGÖ, G. (1921). Über die Randwerte einer analytischen Funktion. *Math. Ann.* **84** 232–244. [MR1512033 https://doi.org/10.1007/BF01459407](https://doi.org/10.1007/BF01459407)
- VAN DELFT, A. and EICHLER, M. (2020). A note on Herglotz’s theorem for time series on function spaces. *Stochastic Process. Appl.* **130** 3687–3710. [MR4092417 https://doi.org/10.1016/j.spa.2019.10.006](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.spa.2019.10.006)
- WALKER, A. M. (1964). Asymptotic properties of least-squares estimates of parameters of the spectrum of a stationary non-deterministic time-series. *J. Aust. Math. Soc.* **4** 363–384. [MR0171345](https://doi.org/10.1017/S0004972600001713)
- WHITTLE, P. (1951). *Hypothesis Testing in Time Series Analysis*. Thesis, Uppsala University. [MR0040634](https://doi.org/10.1017/S0004972600001713)
- WHITTLE, P. (1953). The analysis of multiple stationary time series. *J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. B* **15** 125–139. [MR0056902](https://doi.org/10.1017/S0004972600001713)
- ZHANG, H.-C. (1992). Reduction of the asymptotic bias of autoregressive and spectral estimators by tapering. *J. Time Series Anal.* **13** 451–469. [MR1183157 https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9892.1992.tb00120.x](https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9892.1992.tb00120.x)

INTEGRATIVE METHODS FOR POST-SELECTION INFERENCE UNDER CONVEX CONSTRAINTS

BY SNIGDHA PANIGRAHI^{1,??}, JONATHAN TAYLOR^{2,??} AND ASAF WEINSTEIN^{3,??}

¹*Department of Statistics, University of Michigan, ??psnigdha@umich.edu*

²*Department of Statistics, Stanford University, ??jtaylo@stanford.edu*

³*Department of Statistics, Hebrew University of Jerusalem, ??asaf.weinstein@mail.huji.ac.il*

Inference after model selection has been an active research topic in the past few years, with numerous works offering different approaches to addressing the perils of the reuse of data. In particular, major progress has been made recently on large and useful classes of problems by harnessing general theory of hypothesis testing in exponential families, but these methods have their limitations. Perhaps most immediate is the gap between theory and practice: implementing the exact theoretical prescription in realistic situations—for example, when new data arrives and inference needs to be adjusted accordingly—may be a prohibitive task. In this paper, we propose a Bayesian framework for carrying out inference after variable selection. Our framework is very flexible in the sense that it naturally accommodates different models for the data instead of requiring a case-by-case treatment. This flexibility is achieved by considering the full selective likelihood function where, crucially, we propose a novel and nontrivial approximation to the exact but intractable expression. The advantages of our methods in practical data analysis are demonstrated in an application to HIV drug-resistance data.

REFERENCES

- [1] ARCONES, M. A. (2002). Moderate deviations for M -estimators. *TEST* **11** 465–500. [MR1947607 https://doi.org/10.1007/BF02595717](https://doi.org/10.1007/BF02595717)
- [2] BI, N., MARKOVIC, J., XIA, L. and TAYLOR, J. (2020). Interactive data analysis. *Scand. J. Stat.* **47** 212–249. [MR4075236 https://doi.org/10.1111/sjos.12425](https://doi.org/10.1111/sjos.12425)
- [3] EICHELSBACHER, P. and LÖWE, M. (2003). Moderate deviations for i.i.d. random variables. *ESAIM Probab. Stat.* **7** 209–218. [MR1956079 https://doi.org/10.1051/ps:2003005](https://doi.org/10.1051/ps:2003005)
- [4] FITHIAN, W., SUN, D. and TAYLOR, J. (2014). Optimal inference after model selection. arXiv preprint, [arXiv:1410.2597](https://arxiv.org/abs/1410.2597).
- [5] LEE, J. D., SUN, D. L., SUN, Y. and TAYLOR, J. E. (2016). Exact post-selection inference, with application to the lasso. *Ann. Statist.* **44** 907–927. [MR3485948 https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AOS1371](https://doi.org/10.1214/15-AOS1371)
- [6] MARKOVIC, J. and TAYLOR, J. (2016). Bootstrap inference after using multiple queries for model selection. arXiv preprint, [arXiv:1612.07811](https://arxiv.org/abs/1612.07811).
- [7] NEGAHBAN, S., YU, B., WAINWRIGHT, M. J. and RAVIKUMAR, P. K. (2009). A unified framework for high-dimensional analysis of m -estimators with decomposable regularizers. In *Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems* 1348–1356.
- [8] PANIGRAHI, S. and TAYLOR, J. (2019). Approximate selective inference via maximum likelihood. arXiv preprint, [arXiv:1902.07884](https://arxiv.org/abs/1902.07884).
- [9] PANIGRAHI, S., TAYLOR, J. and WEINSTEIN, A. (2021). Supplement to “Integrative methods for post-selection inference under convex constraints.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2057SUPP>
- [10] PANIGRAHI, S., ZHU, J. and SABATTI, C. (2021). Selection-adjusted inference: An application to confidence intervals for cis-eQTL effect sizes. *Biostatistics* **22** 181–197. [MR4207150 https://doi.org/10.1093/biostatistics/kxz024](https://doi.org/10.1093/biostatistics/kxz024)
- [11] PANIGRAHI, S., MOHAMMED, S., RAO, A. and BALADANDAYUTHAPANI, V. (2020). Integrative bayesian models using post-selective inference: A case study in radiogenomics. arXiv preprint, [arXiv:2004.12012](https://arxiv.org/abs/2004.12012).

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62F30; secondary 62F10, 62G15.

Key words and phrases. Adaptive data analysis, Bayesian inference, carving, conditional inference, convex constraints, selective inference.

- [12] REID, S., TAYLOR, J. and TIBSHIRANI, R. (2017). Post-selection point and interval estimation of signal sizes in Gaussian samples. *Canad. J. Statist.* **45** 128–148. [MR3646193](#) <https://doi.org/10.1002/cjs.11320>
- [13] RHEE, S.-Y., TAYLOR, J., WADHERA, G., BEN-HUR, A., BRUTLAG, D. L. and SHAFER, R. W. (2006). Genotypic predictors of human immunodeficiency virus type 1 drug resistance. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA* **103** 17355–17360.
- [14] TIAN, X. and TAYLOR, J. (2018). Selective inference with a randomized response. *Ann. Statist.* **46** 679–710. [MR3782381](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/17-AOS1564>
- [15] TIBSHIRANI, R. J., TAYLOR, J., LOCKHART, R. and TIBSHIRANI, R. (2016). Exact post-selection inference for sequential regression procedures. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **111** 600–620. [MR3538689](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2015.1108848>
- [16] TIBSHIRANI, R., TIBSHIRANI, R., TAYLOR, J., LOFTUS, J., REID, S. and MARKOVIC, J. (2019). selectiveInference: Tools for post-selection inference. R package version 1.2.5.
- [17] TONG, X. T., MORZFELD, M. and MARZOUK, Y. M. (2020). MALA-within-Gibbs samplers for high-dimensional distributions with sparse conditional structure. *SIAM J. Sci. Comput.* **42** A1765–A1788. [MR4111677](#) <https://doi.org/10.1137/19M1284014>
- [18] WEINSTEIN, A., FITHIAN, W. and BENJAMINI, Y. (2013). Selection adjusted confidence intervals with more power to determine the sign. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **108** 165–176. [MR3174610](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2012.737740>
- [19] YEKUTIELI, D. (2012). Adjusted Bayesian inference for selected parameters. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **74** 515–541. [MR2925372](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9868.2011.01016.x>
- [20] YU, G., BIEN, J. and TIBSHIRANI, R. (2019). Reluctant interaction modeling. arXiv preprint, [arXiv:1907.08414](#).
- [21] ZÖLLNER, S. and PRITCHARD, J. K. (2007). Overcoming the winner’s curse: Estimating penetrance parameters from case-control data. *Am. J. Hum. Genet.* **80** 605–615.

THE COST OF PRIVACY: OPTIMAL RATES OF CONVERGENCE FOR PARAMETER ESTIMATION WITH DIFFERENTIAL PRIVACY

BY T. TONY CAI^{1,*}, YICHEN WANG^{1,†} AND LINJUN ZHANG^{2,??}

¹Department of Statistics, The Wharton School, University of Pennsylvania, *tcai@wharton.upenn.edu,

[†]wangyc@wharton.upenn.edu

²Department of Statistics, Rutgers University, ??linjun.zhang@rutgers.edu

Privacy-preserving data analysis is a rising challenge in contemporary statistics, as the privacy guarantees of statistical methods are often achieved at the expense of accuracy. In this paper, we investigate the tradeoff between statistical accuracy and privacy in mean estimation and linear regression, under both the classical low-dimensional and modern high-dimensional settings. A primary focus is to establish minimax optimality for statistical estimation with the (ϵ, δ) -differential privacy constraint. By refining the “tracing adversary” technique for lower bounds in the theoretical computer science literature, we improve existing minimax lower bound for low-dimensional mean estimation and establish new lower bounds for high-dimensional mean estimation and linear regression problems. We also design differentially private algorithms that attain the minimax lower bounds up to logarithmic factors. In particular, for high-dimensional linear regression, a novel private iterative hard thresholding algorithm is proposed. The numerical performance of differentially private algorithms is demonstrated by simulation studies and applications to real data sets.

REFERENCES

- [1] ABADI, M., CHU, A., GOODFELLOW, I., MCMAHAN, H. B., MIRONOV, I., TALWAR, K. and ZHANG, L. (2016). Deep learning with differential privacy. In *ACM CCS 2016* 308–318. ACM, New York.
- [2] ABOWD, J. M. (2016). The challenge of scientific reproducibility and privacy protection for statistical agencies. In *Census Scientific Advisory Committee*.
- [3] AGARWAL, A., NEGAHBAN, S. and WAINWRIGHT, M. J. (2010). Fast global convergence of gradient methods for high-dimensional statistical recovery. In *Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems* 37–45.
- [4] BASSILY, R., FELDMAN, V., TALWAR, K. and THAKURTA, A. G. (2019). Private stochastic convex optimization with optimal rates. In *Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems* 11282–11291.
- [5] BASSILY, R., SMITH, A. and THAKURTA, A. (2014). Private empirical risk minimization: Efficient algorithms and tight error bounds. In *55th Annual IEEE Symposium on Foundations of Computer Science—FOCS 2014* 464–473. IEEE Computer Soc., Los Alamitos, CA. [MR3344896 https://doi.org/10.1109/FOCS.2014.56](https://doi.org/10.1109/FOCS.2014.56)
- [6] BISWAS, S., DONG, Y., KAMATH, G. and COINPRESS, J. U. (2020). Practical private mean and covariance estimation. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:2006.06618](https://arxiv.org/abs/2006.06618).
- [7] BLUMENSATH, T. and DAVIES, M. E. (2009). Iterative hard thresholding for compressed sensing. *Appl. Comput. Harmon. Anal.* **27** 265–274. [MR2559726 https://doi.org/10.1016/j.acha.2009.04.002](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.acha.2009.04.002)
- [8] BU, Z., DONG, J. LONG, Q. and SU, W. J. (2019). Deep learning with gaussian differential privacy. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1911.11607](https://arxiv.org/abs/1911.11607).
- [9] BUN, M., ULLMAN, J. and VADHAN, S. (2014). Fingerprinting codes and the price of approximate differential privacy. In *STOC’14—Proceedings of the 2014 ACM Symposium on Theory of Computing* 1–10. ACM, New York. [MR3238925 https://doi.org/10.1145/2591796.2591877](https://doi.org/10.1145/2591796.2591877)
- [10] CAI, T. T., WANG, Y. and ZHANG, L. (2021). Supplement to “The cost of privacy: Optimal rates of convergence for parameter estimation with differential privacy.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2058SUPP>

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62F30; secondary 62F12, 62J05.

Key words and phrases. High-dimensional data, differential privacy, mean estimation, linear regression, minimax optimality.

- [11] DING, B., KULKARNI, J. and YEKHANIN, S. (2017). Collecting telemetry data privately. In *NeurIPS* 2017 3571–3580.
- [12] DONG, J. ROTH, A. and SU, W. J. (2019). Gaussian differential privacy. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1905.02383](https://arxiv.org/abs/1905.02383).
- [13] DONOHO, D. L. (1994). Statistical estimation and optimal recovery. *Ann. Statist.* **22** 238–270. [MR1272082 https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176325367](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176325367)
- [14] DUCHI, J. C., JORDAN, M. I. and WAINWRIGHT, M. J. (2018). Minimax optimal procedures for locally private estimation. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **113** 182–201. [MR3803452 https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2017.1389735](https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2017.1389735)
- [15] DWORK, C. and FELDMAN, V. (2018). Privacy-preserving prediction. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1803.10266](https://arxiv.org/abs/1803.10266).
- [16] DWORK, C., MCSHERRY, F., NISSIM, K. and SMITH, A. (2006). Calibrating noise to sensitivity in private data analysis. In *Theory of Cryptography. Lecture Notes in Computer Science* **3876** 265–284. Springer, Berlin. [MR2241676 https://doi.org/10.1007/11681878_14](https://doi.org/10.1007/11681878_14)
- [17] DWORK, C. and ROTH, A. (2013). The algorithmic foundations of differential privacy. *Found. Trends Theor. Comput. Sci.* **9** 211–487. [MR3254020 https://doi.org/10.1561/04000000042](https://doi.org/10.1561/04000000042)
- [18] DWORK, C. and ROTHBLUM, G. N. (2016). Concentrated differential privacy. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1603.01887](https://arxiv.org/abs/1603.01887).
- [19] DWORK, C., SMITH, A., STEINKE, T. and ULLMAN, J. (2017). Exposed! A survey of attacks on private data. *Annu. Rev. Stat. Appl.* **4** 61–84.
- [20] DWORK, C., SMITH, A., STEINKE, T., ULLMAN, J. and VADHAN, S. (2015). Robust traceability from trace amounts. In *2015 IEEE 56th Annual Symposium on Foundations of Computer Science—FOCS 2015* 650–669. IEEE Computer Soc., Los Alamitos, CA. [MR3473333 https://doi.org/10.1109/FOCS.2015.46](https://doi.org/10.1109/FOCS.2015.46)
- [21] DWORK, C., SU, W. J. and ZHANG, L. (2018). Differentially private false discovery rate control. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1807.04209](https://arxiv.org/abs/1807.04209).
- [22] DWORK, C., TALWAR, K., THAKURTA, A. and ZHANG, L. (2014). Analyze Gauss: Optimal bounds for privacy-preserving principal component analysis. In *STOC’14—Proceedings of the 2014 ACM Symposium on Theory of Computing* 11–20. ACM, New York. [MR3238926 https://doi.org/10.1145/2591796.2591883](https://doi.org/10.1145/2591796.2591883)
- [23] ERLINGSSON, Ú., PIHUR, V. and RAPPOR, A. K. (2014). Randomized aggregatable privacy-preserving ordinal response. In *ACM CCS 2014* 1054–1067. ACM, New York.
- [24] HOMER, N., SZELINGER, S., REDMAN, M., DUGGAN, D., TEMBE, W., MUEHLING, J., PEARSON, J. V., STEPHAN, D. A., NELSON, S. F. et al. (2008). Resolving individuals contributing trace amounts of DNA to highly complex mixtures using high-density SNP genotyping microarrays. *PLoS Genet.* **4** e1000167. <https://doi.org/10.1371/journal.pgen.1000167>
- [25] JAIN, P., TEWARI, A. and KAR, P. (2014). On iterative hard thresholding methods for high-dimensional m -estimation. In *NeurIPS* 2014 685–693.
- [26] JOHNSTONE, I. M. (1994). On minimax estimation of a sparse normal mean vector. *Ann. Statist.* **22** 271–289. [MR1272083 https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176325368](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176325368)
- [27] KAMATH, G., LI, J., SINGHAL, V. and ULLMAN, J. (2018). Privately learning high-dimensional distributions. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1805.00216](https://arxiv.org/abs/1805.00216).
- [28] KARWA, V. and VADHAN, S. (2017). Finite sample differentially private confidence intervals. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1711.03908](https://arxiv.org/abs/1711.03908).
- [29] KASIVISWANATHAN, S. P., LEE, H. K., NISSIM, K., RASKHODNIKOVA, S. and SMITH, A. (2011). What can we learn privately? *SIAM J. Comput.* **40** 793–826. [MR2823508 https://doi.org/10.1137/090756090](https://doi.org/10.1137/090756090)
- [30] KIFER, D., SMITH, A. and THAKURTA, A. G. (2012). Private convex empirical risk minimization and high-dimensional regression. In *COLT* 2012 25.1–25.40.
- [31] LEI, J. (2011). Differentially private m -estimators. In *NeurIPS* 2011 361–369.
- [32] LOH, P.-L. and WAINWRIGHT, M. J. (2015). Regularized M -estimators with nonconvexity: Statistical and algorithmic theory for local optima. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **16** 559–616. [MR3335800 https://doi.org/10.1137/15M160559](https://doi.org/10.1137/15M160559)
- [33] LOWTHER, C., MERICO, D., COSTAIN, G., WASERMAN, J., BOYD, K., NOOR, A., SPEEVAK, M., STAVROPOULOS, D. J., WEI, J. et al. (2017). Impact of IQ on the diagnostic yield of chromosomal microarray in a community sample of adults with schizophrenia. *Gen. Med.* **9** 105.
- [34] MCSHERRY, F. and TALWAR, K. (2007). Mechanism design via differential privacy. In *FOCS* 2007 **7** 94–103.
- [35] MIKONOV, I. (2017). Renyi differential privacy. In *CSF* 2017 263–275. IEEE, New York.
- [36] NEGAHBAN, S., YU, B., WAINWRIGHT, M. J. and RAVIKUMAR, P. K. (2009). A unified framework for high-dimensional analysis of m -estimators with decomposable regularizers. In *Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems* 1348–1356.

- [37] PACE, R. K. and BARRY, R. (1997). Sparse spatial autoregressions. *Statist. Probab. Lett.* **33** 291–297.
- [38] RAAB, M. and STEGER, A. (1998). “Balls into bins”—A simple and tight analysis. In *Randomization and Approximation Techniques in Computer Science (Barcelona, 1998)*. *Lecture Notes in Computer Science* **1518** 159–170. Springer, Berlin. MR1729169 https://doi.org/10.1007/3-540-49543-6_13
- [39] ROHDE, A. and STEINBERGER, L. (2020). Geometrizing rates of convergence under local differential privacy constraints. *Ann. Statist.* **48** 2646–2670. MR4152116 <https://doi.org/10.1214/19-AOS1901>
- [40] SHEFFET, O. (2017). Differentially private ordinary least squares. In *Proceedings of the 34th International Conference on Machine Learning* **70** 3105–3114. JMLR.org.
- [41] SMITH, A. (2011). Privacy-preserving statistical estimation with optimal convergence rates [extended abstract]. In *STOC’11—Proceedings of the 43rd ACM Symposium on Theory of Computing* 813–821. ACM, New York. MR2932032 <https://doi.org/10.1145/1993636.1993743>
- [42] STEINKE, T. and ULLMAN, J. (2017). Between pure and approximate differential privacy. *J. Priv. Confid.* **7**.
- [43] STEINKE, T. and ULLMAN, J. (2017). Tight lower bounds for differentially private selection. In *58th Annual IEEE Symposium on Foundations of Computer Science—FOCS 2017* 552–563. IEEE Computer Soc., Los Alamitos, CA. MR3734260 <https://doi.org/10.1109/FOCS.2017.57>
- [44] TALWAR, K., THAKURTA, A. G. and ZHANG, L. (2015). Nearly optimal private lasso. In *NeurIPS 2015* 3025–3033.
- [45] APPLE DIFFERENTIAL PRIVACY TEAM (2017). Privacy at scale.
- [46] WAINWRIGHT, M. J. (2019). *High-Dimensional Statistics: A Non-asymptotic Viewpoint*. *Cambridge Series in Statistical and Probabilistic Mathematics* **48**. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge. MR3967104 <https://doi.org/10.1017/9781108627771>
- [47] WANG, Y.-X., FIENBERG, S. and SMOLA, A. (2015). Privacy for free: Posterior sampling and stochastic gradient Monte Carlo. In *ICML* 2493–2502.
- [48] WASSERMAN, L. and ZHOU, S. (2010). A statistical framework for differential privacy. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **105** 375–389. MR2656057 <https://doi.org/10.1198/jasa.2009.tm08651>

DISTRIBUTED STATISTICAL INFERENCE FOR MASSIVE DATA

BY SONG XI CHEN^{1,??} AND LIUHUA PENG^{2,??}

¹Guanghua School of Management and Center for Statistical Science, Peking University, ?? songxichen@pku.edu.cn

²School of Mathematics and Statistics, University of Melbourne, ?? liuhua.peng@unimelb.edu.au

This paper considers distributed statistical inference for general symmetric statistics in the context of massive data with efficient computation. Estimation efficiency and asymptotic distributions of the distributed statistics are provided, which reveal different results between the nondegenerate and degenerate cases, and show the number of the data subsets plays an important role. Two distributed bootstrap methods are proposed and analyzed to approximate the underlying distribution of the distributed statistics with improved computation efficiency over existing methods. The accuracy of the distributional approximation by the bootstrap are studied theoretically. One of the methods, the pseudo-distributed bootstrap, is particularly attractive if the number of datasets is large as it directly resamples the subset-based statistics, assumes less stringent conditions and its performance can be improved by studentization.

REFERENCES

- ARCONES, M. A. and GINÉ, E. (1992). On the bootstrap of U and V statistics. *Ann. Statist.* **20** 655–674. [MR1165586 https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176348650](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176348650)
- ATTA-ASIAMA, E. and YUAN, M. (2019). Distributed inference for degenerate U -statistics. *Stat* **8** e234, 8. [MR3978408 https://doi.org/10.1002/sta4.234](https://doi.org/10.1002/sta4.234)
- BATTEY, H., FAN, J., LIU, H., LU, J. and ZHU, Z. (2018). Distributed testing and estimation under sparse high dimensional models. *Ann. Statist.* **46** 1352–1382. [MR3798006 https://doi.org/10.1214/17-AOS1587](https://doi.org/10.1214/17-AOS1587)
- BHATTACHARYA, R. N. and GHOSH, J. K. (1978). On the validity of the formal Edgeworth expansion. *Ann. Statist.* **6** 434–451. [MR471142 https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176344134](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176344134)
- CHANG, J. and HALL, P. (2015). Double-bootstrap methods that use a single double-bootstrap simulation. *Biometrika* **102** 203–214. [MR3335106 https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asu060](https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asu060)
- CHEN, S. X. and HALL, P. (1993). Smoothed empirical likelihood confidence intervals for quantiles. *Ann. Statist.* **21** 1166–1181. [MR1241263 https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176349256](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176349256)
- CHEN, S. X. and PENG, L. (2021). Supplement to “Distributed statistical inference for massive data.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2062SUPP>
- CHEN, X. and XIE, M. (2014). A split-and-conquer approach for analysis of extraordinarily large data. *Statist. Sinica* **24** 1655–1684. [MR3308656 https://doi.org/10.1214/13-STA006](https://doi.org/10.1214/13-STA006)
- DAVIDSON, R. and MACKINNON, J. G. (2002). Fast double bootstrap tests of nonnested linear regression models. *Econometric Rev.* **21** 419–429. [MR1951651 https://doi.org/10.1081/ETC-120015384](https://doi.org/10.1081/ETC-120015384)
- EFRON, B. (1979). Bootstrap methods: Another look at the jackknife. *Ann. Statist.* **7** 1–26. [MR515681 https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176344552](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176344552)
- HALL, P. (1992). *The Bootstrap and Edgeworth Expansion*. Springer Series in Statistics. Springer, New York. [MR1145237 https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4612-4384-7](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4612-4384-7)
- HE, X. and SHAO, Q.-M. (1996). A general Bahadur representation of M -estimators and its application to linear regression with nonstochastic designs. *Ann. Statist.* **24** 2608–2630. [MR1425971 https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1032181172](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1032181172)
- HUBER, P. J. (1967). The behavior of maximum likelihood estimates under nonstandard conditions. In *Proc. Fifth Berkeley Sympos. Math. Statist. and Probability (Berkeley, Calif., 1965/66)*, Vol. I: Statistics **5.1** 221–233. Univ. California Press, Berkeley, CA. [MR0216620 https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1032181172](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1032181172)
- JING, B.-Y. and WANG, Q. (2010). A unified approach to Edgeworth expansions for a general class of statistics. *Statist. Sinica* **20** 613–636. [MR2682633 https://doi.org/10.1214/09-STA006](https://doi.org/10.1214/09-STA006)

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62G09; secondary 62G20.

Key words and phrases. Distributed bootstrap, distributed statistics, massive data, pseudo-distributed bootstrap.

- KLEINER, A., TALWALKAR, A., SARKAR, P. and JORDAN, M. I. (2014). A scalable bootstrap for massive data. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **76** 795–816. [MR3248677](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/rssb.12050>
- LAHIRI, S. N. (1994). On two-term Edgeworth expansions and bootstrap approximations for Studentized multivariate M -estimators. *Sankhyā Ser. A* **56** 201–226. [MR1664912](#)
- LAI, T. L. and WANG, J. Q. (1993). Edgeworth expansions for symmetric statistics with applications to bootstrap methods. *Statist. Sinica* **3** 517–542. [MR1243399](#)
- LIN, N. and XI, R. (2010). Fast surrogates of U -statistics. *Comput. Statist. Data Anal.* **54** 16–24. [MR2558454](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.csda.2009.08.009>
- LIU, R. Y. (1988). Bootstrap procedures under some non-i.i.d. models. *Ann. Statist.* **16** 1696–1708. [MR964947](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176351062>
- SENGUPTA, S., VOLGUSHEV, S. and SHAO, X. (2016). A subsampled double bootstrap for massive data. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **111** 1222–1232. [MR3561944](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2015.1080709>
- SERFLING, R. J. (1980). *Approximation Theorems of Mathematical Statistics*. Wiley, New York. [MR0595165](#) <https://doi.org/0.1002/9780470316481>
- SHERMAN, R. P. (1993). The limiting distribution of the maximum rank correlation estimator. *Econometrica* **61** 123–137. [MR1201705](#) <https://doi.org/10.2307/2951780>
- SKOVGAARD, I. M. (1981). Transformation of an Edgeworth expansion by a sequence of smooth functions. *Scand. J. Stat.* **8** 207–217. [MR0642801](#)
- SZÉKELY, G. J., RIZZO, M. L. and BAKIROV, N. K. (2007). Measuring and testing dependence by correlation of distances. *Ann. Statist.* **35** 2769–2794. [MR2382665](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/009053607000000505>
- VOLGUSHEV, S., CHAO, S.-K. and CHENG, G. (2019). Distributed inference for quantile regression processes. *Ann. Statist.* **47** 1634–1662. [MR3911125](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/18-AOS1730>
- ZHANG, Y., DUCHI, J. C. and WAINWRIGHT, M. J. (2013). Communication-efficient algorithms for statistical optimization. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **14** 3321–3363. [MR3144464](#)

CONSTRUCTION OF MIXED ORTHOGONAL ARRAYS WITH HIGH STRENGTH

BY SHANQI PANG^{1,??}, JING WANG^{2,??}, DENNIS K. J. LIN^{3,??} AND MIN-QIAN LIU^{4,??}

¹College of Mathematics and Information Science, Henan Normal University, ??pangshanqi@263.net

²College of Mathematics and Science, Shanghai Normal University, ??wangjing19@126.com

³Department of Statistics, Purdue University, ??dkjlin@purdue.edu

⁴School of Statistics and Data Science, LPMC & KLMDASR, Nankai University, ??mqliu@nankai.edu.cn

A considerable portion of the work on mixed orthogonal arrays applies specifically to arrays of strength 2. Although strength $t = 2$ is arguably the most important case for statistical applications, there is an urgent need for better methods for $t \geq 3$. However, the knowledge on the existence of arrays for $t \geq 3$ is rather limited. In this paper, new construction methods for symmetric and asymmetric orthogonal arrays (OAs) with high strength are proposed by using lower strength orthogonal partitions of spaces and OAs. A positive answer is provided to the open problem in Hedayat, Sloane and Stufken (*Orthogonal Arrays: Theory and Applications* (1999) Springer) on developing better methods and tools for the construction of mixed orthogonal arrays with strength $t \geq 3$. Not only are the methods straightforward, but also they are useful for constructing symmetric or asymmetric OAs of arbitrary strengths, numbers of levels and various sizes. The constructed OAs can be utilized to generate more OAs. The resulting OAs have a high degree of flexibility and many other desirable properties. Some selective OAs are tabulated for practical uses.

REFERENCES

- AGGARWAL, M. L. and BUDHRAJA, V. (2002). On construction of some new symmetric and asymmetric orthogonal arrays. *J. Discrete Math. Sci. Cryptogr.* **5** 215–225. [MR1986731](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/09720529.2002.10697950>
- BIERBRAUER, J. (2005). *Introduction to Coding Theory. Discrete Mathematics and Its Applications*. CRC Press/CRC, Boca Raton, FL. [MR2079734](#)
- CARLET, C. and CHEN, X. (2018). Constructing low-weight d th-order correlation-immune Boolean functions through the Fourier–Hadamard transform. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **64** 2969–2978. [MR3784600](#) <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2017.2785775>
- CHEN, G., JI, L. and LEI, J. (2014). The existence of mixed orthogonal arrays with four and five factors of strength two. *J. Combin. Des.* **22** 323–342. [MR3218310](#) <https://doi.org/10.1002/jcd.21350>
- CHEN, G. Z. and LEI, J. G. (2017). Constructions of mixed orthogonal arrays of strength three. *Sci. Sin., Math.* **47** 545–564 (in Chinese).
- CHÊNG, C. S. (1980). Orthogonal arrays with variable numbers of symbols. *Ann. Statist.* **8** 447–453. [MR0560740](#)
- COLBOURN, C. J. and DINITZ, J. H. (2007). *The CRC Handbook of Combinatorial Designs*. Chapman & Hall/CRC, Boca Raton, FL.
- DEAN, A., MORRIS, M., STUFKEN, J. and BINGHAM, D., eds. (2015). *Handbook of Design and Analysis of Experiments. Chapman & Hall/CRC Handbooks of Modern Statistical Methods*. CRC Press, Boca Raton, FL. [MR3642972](#)
- GOYENCHE, D. and ŻYCZKOWSKI, K. (2014). Genuinely multipartite entangled states and orthogonal arrays. *Phys. Rev. A* **90** 022316.
- HE, Y. and TANG, B. (2013). Strong orthogonal arrays and associated Latin hypercubes for computer experiments. *Biometrika* **100** 254–260. [MR3034340](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/ass065>
- HE, Y. and TANG, B. (2014). A characterization of strong orthogonal arrays of strength three. *Ann. Statist.* **42** 1347–1360. [MR3226159](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1225>

- HEDAYAT, A. S., SLOANE, N. J. A. and STUFKEN, J. (1999). *Orthogonal Arrays: Theory and Applications*. Springer Series in Statistics. Springer, New York. With a foreword by C. R. Rao. MR1693498 <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4612-1478-6>
- HEDAYAT, A. S., STUFKEN, J. and SU, G. (1996). On difference schemes and orthogonal arrays of strength t . *J. Statist. Plann. Inference* **56** 307–324. MR1436014 [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0378-3758\(96\)00026-2](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0378-3758(96)00026-2)
- Ji, L. and YIN, J. (2010). Constructions of new orthogonal arrays and covering arrays of strength three. *J. Combin. Theory Ser. A* **117** 236–247. MR2592899 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jcta.2009.06.002>
- JIANG, B. and AI, M. (2017). Construction of uniform U -designs. *J. Statist. Plann. Inference* **181** 1–10. MR3567993 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jspi.2016.08.003>
- JIANG, L. and YIN, J. (2013). An approach of constructing mixed-level orthogonal arrays of strength ≥ 3 . *Sci. China Math.* **56** 1109–1115. MR3063958 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s11425-013-4616-y>
- KUHFELD, W. F. (2018). Orthogonal arrays. Available at <http://support.sas.com/techsup/technote/ts723.html>.
- LIN, C. D., MUKERJEE, R. and TANG, B. (2009). Construction of orthogonal and nearly orthogonal Latin hypercubes. *Biometrika* **96** 243–247. MR2482150 <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asn064>
- LIN, C. D., BINGHAM, D., SITTE, R. R. and TANG, B. (2010). A new and flexible method for constructing designs for computer experiments. *Ann. Statist.* **38** 1460–1477. MR2662349 <https://doi.org/10.1214/09-AOS757>
- LIU, H. and LIU, M.-Q. (2015). Column-orthogonal strong orthogonal arrays and sliced strong orthogonal arrays. *Statist. Sinica* **25** 1713–1734. MR3409089
- LO, H. K., CURTY, M. and QI, B. (2012). Measurement-device-independent quantum key distribution. *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **108** 130503.
- MUKERJEE, R., SUN, F. and TANG, B. (2014). Nearly orthogonal arrays mappable into fully orthogonal arrays. *Biometrika* **101** 957–963. MR3286928 <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asu042>
- PANG, S. (2004). Construction methods of orthogonal arrays and their applications. Ph.D. thesis, Xidian Univ. Xian, China (in Chinese).
- PANG, S., WANG, X., WANG, J., DU, J. and FENG, M. (2018). Construction and count of 1-resilient rotation symmetric Boolean functions. *Inform. Sci.* **450** 336–342. MR3789898 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.ins.2018.03.052>
- PANG, S., ZHANG, X., LIN, X. and ZHANG, Q. (2019). Two and three-uniform states from irredundant orthogonal arrays. *npj Quantum Inf.* **5** 52.
- PANG, S., WANG, J., LIN, D. K. J. and LIU, M.-Q. (2021). Supplement to “Construction of mixed orthogonal arrays with high strength.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2063SUPP>
- PENG, J., MUKERJEE, R. and LIN, D. K. J. (2019). Design of order-of-addition experiments. *Biometrika* **106** 683–694. MR3992397 <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asz025>
- RIEBE, M., HÄFFNER, H., ROOS, C. F., HÄNSEL, W., BENHELM, J., LANCASTER, G. P. T., KÖRBER, T. W., BECHER, C., SCHMIDT-KALER, F. et al. (2004). Deterministic quantum teleportation with atoms. *Nature* **429** 734–737.
- SCHOEN, E. D., EENDEBAK, P. T. and NGUYEN, M. V. M. (2010). Complete enumeration of pure-level and mixed-level orthogonal arrays. *J. Combin. Des.* **18** 123–140. MR2604638 <https://doi.org/10.1002/jcd.20236>
- STINSON, D. R. (2004). *Combinatorial Designs: Constructions and Analysis*. Springer, New York. With a foreword by Charles J. Colbourn. MR2029249
- STINSON, D. R. (2018). Ideal ramp schemes and related combinatorial objects. *Discrete Math.* **341** 299–307. MR3724097 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.disc.2017.08.041>
- SUEN, C., DAS, A. and DEY, A. (2001). On the construction of asymmetric orthogonal arrays. *Statist. Sinica* **11** 241–260. MR1820009
- SUEN, C. and DEY, A. (2003). Construction of asymmetric orthogonal arrays through finite geometries. *J. Statist. Plann. Inference* **115** 623–635. MR1985887 [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0378-3758\(02\)00165-9](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0378-3758(02)00165-9)
- SUN, F., LIU, M.-Q. and QIAN, P. Z. G. (2014). On the construction of nested space-filling designs. *Ann. Statist.* **42** 1394–1425. MR3226161 <https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1229>
- SUN, F. and TANG, B. (2017). A method of constructing space-filling orthogonal designs. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **112** 683–689. MR3671762 <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2016.1159211>
- TANG, B. (1993). Orthogonal array-based Latin hypercubes. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **88** 1392–1397. MR1245375
- VOELKEL, J. G. (2019). The design of order-of-addition experiments. *J. Qual. Technol.* **51** 230–241.
- WANG, J. C. and WU, C. F. J. (1992). Nearly orthogonal arrays with mixed levels and small runs. *Technometrics* **34** 409–422.
- XU, H. and WU, C. F. J. (2001). Generalized minimum aberration for asymmetrical fractional factorial designs. *Ann. Statist.* **29** 549–560. MR1863969 <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1009210552>
- YIN, Y., LIN, D. K. J. and LIU, M.-Q. (2014). Sliced Latin hypercube designs via orthogonal arrays. *J. Statist. Plann. Inference* **149** 162–171. MR3199902 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jspi.2014.02.008>
- YIN, J., WANG, J., Ji, L. and LI, Y. (2011). On the existence of orthogonal arrays $OA(3, 5, 4n + 2)$. *J. Combin. Theory Ser. A* **118** 270–276. MR2737200 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jcta.2010.03.013>

- ZHANG, Y. (2006). Data analysis and constructions of orthogonal arrays. Ph.D. thesis, East China Normal Univ., Shanghai, China (in Chinese).
- ZHANG, Y. (2007). Orthogonal arrays obtained by repeating-column difference matrices. *Discrete Math.* **307** 246–261. [MR2285195](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.disc.2006.06.029>
- ZHANG, T., DENG, Q. and DEY, A. (2017). Construction of asymmetric orthogonal arrays of strength three via a replacement method. *J. Combin. Des.* **25** 339–348. [MR3666988](#) <https://doi.org/10.1002/jcd.21557>
- ZHANG, Y., LU, Y. and PANG, S. (1999). Orthogonal arrays obtained by orthogonal decomposition of projection matrices. *Statist. Sinica* **9** 595–604. [MR1707856](#)
- ZHANG, Y., PANG, S. and WANG, Y. (2001). Orthogonal arrays obtained by generalized Hadamard product. *Discrete Math.* **238** 151–170. [MR1843905](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0012-365X\(00\)00421-0](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0012-365X(00)00421-0)
- ZHANG, T., ZONG, Y. and DEY, A. (2016). On the construction of asymmetric orthogonal arrays. *J. Statist. Plann. Inference* **170** 77–82. [MR3427861](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jspi.2015.09.004>
- ZHAO, Z., CHEN, Y. A., ZHANG, A. N., YANG, T., BRIEGEL, H. and PAN, J. W. (2004). Experimental demonstration of five-photon entanglement and open-destination teleportation. *Nature* **430** 54–58.
- ZHOU, Y.-D. and XU, H. (2014). Space-filling fractional factorial designs. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **109** 1134–1144. [MR3265686](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2013.873367>

FOUNDATIONS OF STRUCTURAL CAUSAL MODELS WITH CYCLES AND LATENT VARIABLES

BY STEPHAN BONGERS^{1,*}, PATRICK FORRÉ^{1,†}, JONAS PETERS^{2,??} AND JORIS M. MOOIJ^{3,??}

¹*Informatics Institute, University of Amsterdam, *s.r.bongers@uva.nl, †p.d.forre@uva.nl*

²*Department of Mathematical Sciences, University of Copenhagen, ??jonas.peters@math.ku.dk*

³*Korteweg–De Vries Institute, University of Amsterdam, ??j.m.mooij@uva.nl*

Structural causal models (SCMs), also known as (nonparametric) structural equation models (SEMs), are widely used for causal modeling purposes. In particular, acyclic SCMs, also known as recursive SEMs, form a well-studied subclass of SCMs that generalize causal Bayesian networks to allow for latent confounders. In this paper, we investigate SCMs in a more general setting, allowing for the presence of both latent confounders and cycles. We show that in the presence of cycles, many of the convenient properties of acyclic SCMs do not hold in general: they do not always have a solution; they do not always induce unique observational, interventional and counterfactual distributions; a marginalization does not always exist, and if it exists the marginal model does not always respect the latent projection; they do not always satisfy a Markov property; and their graphs are not always consistent with their causal semantics. We prove that for SCMs in general each of these properties does hold under certain solvability conditions. Our work generalizes results for SCMs with cycles that were only known for certain special cases so far. We introduce the class of simple SCMs that extends the class of acyclic SCMs to the cyclic setting, while preserving many of the convenient properties of acyclic SCMs. With this paper, we aim to provide the foundations for a general theory of statistical causal modeling with SCMs.

REFERENCES

- [1] BALKE, A. and PEARL, J. (1994). Probabilistic evaluation of counterfactual queries. In *Proceedings of the Twelfth National Conference on Artificial Intelligence (AAAI-94)* **1** 230–237. AAAI Press, Menlo Park.
- [2] BECKERS, S. and HALPERN, J. Y. (2019). Abstracting causal models. In *Proceedings of the Thirty-Third AAAI Conference on Artificial Intelligence (AAAI-19)* **33** 2678–2685. AAAI Press, Menlo Park.
- [3] BLOM, T., BONGERS, S. and MOOIJ, J. M. (2019). Beyond structural causal models: Causal constraints models. In *Proceedings of the 35th Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-19)* (R. P. Adams and V. Gogate, eds.). AUAI Press.
- [4] BOLLEN, K. A. (1989). *Structural Equations with Latent Variables*. Wiley Series in Probability and Mathematical Statistics: Applied Probability and Statistics. Wiley, New York. MR0996025 <https://doi.org/10.1002/9781118619179>
- [5] BONGERS, S., BLOM, T. and MOOIJ, J. M. (2021). Causal modeling of dynamical systems. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1803.08784v3](https://arxiv.org/abs/1803.08784v3) [cs.AI].
- [6] BONGERS, S., FORRÉ, P., PETERS, J. and MOOIJ, J. M. (2021). Supplement to “Foundations of structural causal models with cycles and latent variables.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2064SUPP>
- [7] BÜHLMANN, P., PETERS, J. and ERNEST, J. (2014). CAM: Causal additive models, high-dimensional order search and penalized regression. *Ann. Statist.* **42** 2526–2556. MR3277670 <https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1260>
- [8] BYRNE, R. M. J. (2007). *The Rational Imagination: How People Create Alternatives to Reality*. A Bradford Book. MIT Press, Cambridge, MA.

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62A09, 68T30; secondary 68T37.

Key words and phrases. Structural causal models, causal graph, cycles, interventions, counterfactuals, solvability, Markov properties, marginalization.

- [9] COOPER, G. F. (1997). A simple constraint-based algorithm for efficiently mining observational databases for causal relationships. *Data Min. Knowl. Discov.* **1** 203–224.
- [10] DAWID, A. P. (2002). Influence diagrams for causal modelling and inference. *Int. Stat. Rev.* **70** 161–189.
- [11] DUNCAN, O. D. (1975). *Introduction to Structural Equation Models: Studies in Population*. Academic Press, New York. [MR0398558](#)
- [12] EATON, D. and MURPHY, K. (2007). Exact Bayesian structure learning from uncertain interventions. In *Proceedings of the Eleventh International Conference on Artificial Intelligence and Statistics* (M. Meila and X. Shen, eds.). *Proceedings of Machine Learning Research* **2** 107–114.
- [13] EBERHARDT, F., HOYER, P. and SCHEINES, R. (2010). Combining experiments to discover linear cyclic models with latent variables. In *Proceedings of the Thirteenth International Conference on Artificial Intelligence and Statistics* (Y. W. Teh and M. Titterton, eds.). *Proceedings of Machine Learning Research* **9** 185–192.
- [14] EVANS, R. J. (2016). Graphs for margins of Bayesian networks. *Scand. J. Stat.* **43** 625–648. [MR3543314](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/sjos.12194>
- [15] EVANS, R. J. (2018). Margins of discrete Bayesian networks. *Ann. Statist.* **46** 2623–2656. [MR3851750](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/17-AOS1631>
- [16] FISHER, F. M. (1970). A correspondence principle for simultaneous equation models. *Econometrica* **38** 73–92.
- [17] FORRÉ, P. and MOOIJ, J. M. (2017). Markov properties for graphical models with cycles and latent variables. Preprint. Available at [arXiv:1710.08775](#) [math.ST].
- [18] FORRÉ, P. and MOOIJ, J. M. (2018). Constraint-based causal discovery for non-linear structural causal models with cycles and latent confounders. In *Proceedings of the 34th Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-18)* (A. Globerson and R. Silva, eds.). AUAI Press.
- [19] FORRÉ, P. and MOOIJ, J. M. (2019). Causal calculus in the presence of cycles, latent confounders and selection bias. In *Proceedings of the 35th Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-19)* (R. P. Adams and V. Gogate, eds.). AUAI Press.
- [20] FOYCEL, R., DRAISMA, J. and DRTON, M. (2012). Half-trek criterion for generic identifiability of linear structural equation models. *Ann. Statist.* **40** 1682–1713. [MR3015040](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/12-AOS1012>
- [21] GOLDBERGER, A. S. and DUNCAN, O. D. (1973). *Structural Equation Models in the Social Sciences*. Seminar Press, New York.
- [22] HAAVELMO, T. (1943). The statistical implications of a system of simultaneous equations. *Econometrica* **11** 1–12. [MR0007954](#) <https://doi.org/10.2307/1905714>
- [23] HALPERN, J. (1998). Axiomatizing causal reasoning. In *Proceedings of the Fourteenth Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-98)* (G. Cooper and S. Moral, eds.) 202–210. Morgan Kaufmann, San Francisco, CA, USA.
- [24] HYTTINEN, A., EBERHARDT, F. and HOYER, P. O. (2012). Learning linear cyclic causal models with latent variables. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **13** 3387–3439. [MR3005891](#)
- [25] HYTTINEN, A., HOYER, P. O., EBERHARDT, F. and JÄRVISALO, M. (2013). Discovering cyclic causal models with latent variables: A general SAT-based procedure. In *Proceedings of the Twenty-Ninth Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-13)* (A. Nicholson and P. Smyth, eds.) 301–310. AUAI Press, Corvallis, OR, USA.
- [26] IWASAKI, Y. and SIMON, H. A. (1994). Causality and model abstraction. *Artificial Intelligence* **67** 143–194. [MR1281657](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/0004-3702\(94\)90014-0](https://doi.org/10.1016/0004-3702(94)90014-0)
- [27] KECHRIS, A. S. (1995). *Classical Descriptive Set Theory*. *Graduate Texts in Mathematics* **156**. Springer, New York. [MR1321597](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4612-4190-4>
- [28] KOSTER, J. T. A. (1996). Markov properties of nonrecursive causal models. *Ann. Statist.* **24** 2148–2177. [MR1421166](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1069362315>
- [29] KOSTER, J. T. A. (1999). On the validity of the Markov interpretation of path diagrams of Gaussian structural equations systems with correlated errors. *Scand. J. Stat.* **26** 413–431. [MR1712043](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/1467-9469.00157>
- [30] LACERDA, G., SPIRITES, P. L., RAMSEY, J. and HOYER, P. O. (2008). Discovering cyclic causal models by independent components analysis. In *Proceedings of the Twenty-Fourth Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-08)* (D. McAllester and P. Myllymaki, eds.) 366–374. AUAI Press, Corvallis, OR, USA.
- [31] LAURITZEN, S. L. (1996). *Graphical Models*. *Oxford Statistical Science Series* **17**. Clarendon Press, Oxford. [MR1419991](#)
- [32] LAURITZEN, S. L., DAWID, A. P., LARSEN, B. N. and LEIMER, H. G. (1990). Independence properties of directed Markov fields. *Networks* **20** 491–505. [MR1064735](#) <https://doi.org/10.1002/net.3230200503>

- [33] LEWIS, D. K. (1979). Counterfactual dependence and time's arrow. *Noûs* **13** 455–476. <https://doi.org/10.2307/2215339>
- [34] MAATHUIS, M. H., KALISCH, M. and BÜHLMANN, P. (2009). Estimating high-dimensional intervention effects from observational data. *Ann. Statist.* **37** 3133–3164. [MR2549555 https://doi.org/10.1214/09-AOS685](https://doi.org/10.1214/09-AOS685)
- [35] MANI, S. (2006). A Bayesian local causal discovery framework. PhD thesis, Univ. Pittsburg.
- [36] MASON, S. J. (1953). Feedback theory—Some properties of signal flow graphs. In *Proceedings of the IRE* **41** 1144–1156. IEEE.
- [37] MASON, S. J. (1956). Feedback theory—Further properties of signal flow graphs. In *Proceedings of the IRE* **44** 920–926. IEEE.
- [38] MEEK, C. (1995). Strong completeness and faithfulness in Bayesian networks. In *Proceedings of the Eleventh Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-95)* (P. Besnard and S. Hanks, eds.) 411–418. Morgan Kaufmann, San Francisco, CA, USA.
- [39] MOGENSEN, S. W. and HANSEN, N. R. (2020). Markov equivalence of marginalized local independence graphs. *Ann. Statist.* **48** 539–559. [MR4065173 https://doi.org/10.1214/19-AOS1821](https://doi.org/10.1214/19-AOS1821)
- [40] MOGENSEN, S. W., MALINSKY, D. and HANSEN, N. R. (2018). Causal learning for partially observed stochastic dynamical systems. In *Proceedings of the Thirty-Fourth Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-18)* (A. Globerson and R. Silva, eds.) AUAI Press.
- [41] MOOIJ, J. M. and CLAASSEN, T. (2020). Constraint-based causal discovery using partial ancestral graphs in the presence of cycles. In *Proceedings of the 36th Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-20)* (J. Peters and D. Sontag, eds.) **124** 1159–1168. PMLR.
- [42] MOOIJ, J. M. and HESKES, T. (2013). Cyclic causal discovery from continuous equilibrium data. In *Proceedings of the 29th Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-13)* (A. Nicholson and P. Smyth, eds.) 431–439. AUAI Press, Corvallis, OR, USA.
- [43] MOOIJ, J. M., JANZING, D. and SCHÖLKOPF, B. (2013). From ordinary differential equations to structural causal models: The deterministic case. In *Proceedings of the 29th Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-13)* (A. Nicholson and P. Smyth, eds.) 440–448. AUAI Press.
- [44] MOOIJ, J. M., MAGLIACANE, S. and CLAASSEN, T. (2020). Joint causal inference from multiple contexts. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **21** Paper No. 99, 108. [MR4119167](https://doi.org/10.1162/10997522035119167)
- [45] MOOIJ, J. M., PETERS, J., JANZING, D., ZSCHEISCHLER, J. and SCHÖLKOPF, B. (2016). Distinguishing cause from effect using observational data: Methods and benchmarks. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **17** Paper No. 32, 102. [MR3491126](https://doi.org/10.1162/1099752163191126)
- [46] NEAL, R. M. (2000). On deducing conditional independence from d -separation in causal graphs with feedback. *J. Artificial Intelligence Res.* **12** 87–91. [MR1745047 https://doi.org/10.1613/jair.689](https://doi.org/10.1613/jair.689)
- [47] PEARL, J. (1985). A constraint propagation approach to probabilistic reasoning. In *Proceedings of the First Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-85)* (L. Kanal and J. Lemmer, eds.) 31–42. AUAI Press, Corvallis, OR, USA.
- [48] PEARL, J. (2009). *Causality: Models, Reasoning, and Inference*, 2nd ed. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge. [MR2548166 https://doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511803161](https://doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511803161)
- [49] PEARL, J. and DECHTER, R. (1996). Identifying independence in causal graphs with feedback. In *Proceedings of the Twelfth Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-96)* (E. Horvitz and F. Jensen, eds.) 420–426. Morgan Kaufmann, San Francisco, CA, USA.
- [50] PEARL, J. and MACKENZIE, D. (2018). *The Book of Why: The New Science of Cause and Effect*. Basic Books, New York. [MR3791446](https://doi.org/10.1162/1099752183191446)
- [51] PETERS, J., JANZING, D. and SCHÖLKOPF, B. (2017). *Elements of Causal Inference: Foundations and Learning Algorithms. Adaptive Computation and Machine Learning*. MIT Press, Cambridge, MA. [MR3822088](https://doi.org/10.1162/10997521731912088)
- [52] PETERS, J., MOOIJ, J. M., JANZING, D. and SCHÖLKOPF, B. (2014). Causal discovery with continuous additive noise models. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **15** 2009–2053. [MR3231600](https://doi.org/10.1162/1099752143191600)
- [53] PFISTER, N., BAUER, S. and PETERS, J. (2019). Learning stable and predictive structures in kinetic systems. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA* **116** 25405–25411. [MR4047351 https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.1905688116](https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.1905688116)
- [54] RICHARDSON, T. (2003). Markov properties for acyclic directed mixed graphs. *Scand. J. Stat.* **30** 145–157. [MR1963898 https://doi.org/10.1111/1467-9469.00323](https://doi.org/10.1111/1467-9469.00323)
- [55] RICHARDSON, T. and SPIRITES, P. (1999). Automated discovery of linear feedback models. In *Computation, Causation, and Discovery* (C. Glymour and G. F. Cooper, eds.) 253–302. AAAI Press, Menlo Park, CA. [MR1696455](https://doi.org/10.1162/1099752993191696455)
- [56] RICHARDSON, T. and SPIRITES, P. (2002). Ancestral graph Markov models. *Ann. Statist.* **30** 962–1030. [MR1926166 https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1031689015](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1031689015)

- [57] RICHARDSON, T. S. (1996). A discovery algorithm for directed cyclic graphs. In *Proceedings of the Twelfth Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-96)* (E. Horvitz and F. Jensen, eds.) 454–461. Morgan Kaufmann, San Francisco, CA, USA. [MR1617227](#)
- [58] RICHARDSON, T. S. (1996). Discovering cyclic causal structure. Technical Report No. CMU-PHIL-68, Carnegie Mellon Univ.
- [59] RICHARDSON, T. S. (1996). Models of feedback: Interpretation and discovery. Ph.D. thesis, Carnegie Mellon Univ.
- [60] RICHARDSON, T. S. and ROBINS, J. (2013). Single world intervention graphs (SWIGs): A unification of the counterfactual and graphical approaches to causality. Technical Report No. 128, Center for Statistics and the Social Sciences.
- [61] ROESE, N. J. (1997). Counterfactual thinking. *Psychol. Bull.* **121** 133–148.
- [62] RUBENSTEIN, P. K., WEICHWALD, S., BONGERS, S., MOOIJ, J. M., JANZING, D., GROSSE-WENTRUP, M. and SCHÖLKOPF, B. (2017). Causal consistency of structural equation models. In *Proceedings of the 33rd Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-17)* (G. Elidan and K. Kersting, eds.). AUAI Press.
- [63] RUBIN, D. B. (1974). Estimating causal effects of treatments in randomized and nonrandomized studies. *J. Educ. Psychol.* **66** 688–701.
- [64] SHPITSER, I. and PEARL, J. (2008). Complete identification methods for the causal hierarchy. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **9** 1941–1979. [MR2447308](#)
- [65] SPIRTES, P. (1993). Directed cyclic graphs, conditional independence, and non-recursive linear structural equation models. Technical Report No. CMU-PHIL-35, Carnegie Mellon Univ.
- [66] SPIRTES, P. (1994). Conditional independence in directed cyclic graphical models for feedback. Technical Report No. CMU-PHIL-54, Carnegie Mellon Univ.
- [67] SPIRTES, P. (1995). Directed cyclic graphical representations of feedback models. In *Proceedings of the Eleventh Conference on Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-95)* (P. Besnard and S. Hanks, eds.) 499–506. Morgan Kaufmann, San Francisco, CA, USA.
- [68] SPIRTES, P., GLYMOUR, C. and SCHEINES, R. (2000). *Causation, Prediction, and Search*, 2nd ed. *Adaptive Computation and Machine Learning*. MIT Press, Cambridge, MA. [MR1815675](#)
- [69] SPIRTES, P., MEEK, C. and RICHARDSON, T. (1999). An algorithm for causal inference in the presence of latent variables and selection bias. In *Computation, Causation, and Discovery* (C. Glymour and G. F. Cooper, eds.) 211–252. AAAI Press, Menlo Park, CA. [MR1689972](#)
- [70] SPIRTES, P., RICHARDSON, T., MEEK, C., SCHEINES, R. and GLYMOUR, C. (1998). Using path diagrams as a structural equation modelling tool. *Sociol. Methods Res.* **27** 182–225.
- [71] TIAN, J. (2002). Studies in causal reasoning and learning. Technical Report No. R-309, Cognitive Systems Laboratory, Univ. California, Los Angeles, USA.
- [72] TIAN, J. and PEARL, J. (2001). Causal discovery from changes. In *Proceedings of the 17th Conference in Uncertainty in Artificial Intelligence (UAI-01)* (J. Breese and D. Koller, eds.) 512–521. Morgan Kaufmann, San Francisco, CA, USA.
- [73] VERMA, T. S. (1993). Graphical aspects of causal models. Technical Report No. R-191. Computer Science Department, Univ. California, Los Angeles, USA.
- [74] WRIGHT, S. (1921). Correlation and causation. *J. Agric. Res.* **20** 557–585.
- [75] ZHANG, J. (2008). On the completeness of orientation rules for causal discovery in the presence of latent confounders and selection bias. *Artificial Intelligence* **172** 1873–1896. [MR2459793](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.artint.2008.08.001>

MEASURING DEPENDENCE IN THE WASSERSTEIN DISTANCE FOR BAYESIAN NONPARAMETRIC MODELS

BY MARTA CATALANO^{1,??}, ANTONIO LIJOI^{2,*} AND IGOR PRÜNSTER^{2,†}

¹Department of Statistics, University of Warwick, ??marta.catalano@warwick.ac.uk

²Department of Decision Sciences, Bocconi University, *antonio.lijoi@unibocconi.it, †igor.pruenster@unibocconi.it

The proposal and study of dependent Bayesian nonparametric models has been one of the most active research lines in the last two decades, with random vectors of measures representing a natural and popular tool to define them. Nonetheless, a principled approach to understand and quantify the associated dependence structure is still missing. We devise a general, and not model-specific, framework to achieve this task for random measure based models, which consists in: (a) quantify dependence of a random vector of probabilities in terms of closeness to exchangeability, which corresponds to the maximally dependent coupling with the same marginal distributions, that is, the comonotonic vector; (b) recast the problem in terms of the underlying random measures (in the same Fréchet class) and quantify the closeness to comonotonicity; (c) define a distance based on the Wasserstein metric, which is ideally suited for spaces of measures, to measure the dependence in a principled way. Several results, which represent the very first in the area, are obtained. In particular, useful bounds in terms of the underlying Lévy intensities are derived relying on compound Poisson approximations. These are then specialized to popular models in the Bayesian literature leading to interesting insights.

REFERENCES

- [1] BACALLADO, S., DIACONIS, P. and HOLMES, S. (2015). de Finetti priors using Markov chain Monte Carlo computations. *Stat. Comput.* **25** 797–808. [MR3360493 https://doi.org/10.1007/s11222-015-9562-9](https://doi.org/10.1007/s11222-015-9562-9)
- [2] BICKEL, P. J. and FREEDMAN, D. A. (1981). Some asymptotic theory for the bootstrap. *Ann. Statist.* **9** 1196–1217. [MR0630103](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176330103)
- [3] CAMERLENGHI, F., LIJOI, A. and PRÜNSTER, I. (2021). Survival analysis via hierarchically dependent mixture hazards. *Ann. Statist.* **49** 863 – 884. <https://doi.org/10.1214/20-AOS1982>
- [4] CATALANO, M., LIJOI, A. and PRÜNSTER, I. (2020). Approximation of Bayesian models for time-to-event data. *Electron. J. Stat.* **14** 3366–3395. [MR4148234 https://doi.org/10.1214/20-EJS1746](https://doi.org/10.1214/20-EJS1746)
- [5] CIFARELLI, D. M. and REGAZZINI, E. (1978). Nonparametric statistical problems under partial exchangeability: The role of associative means. *Quaderni Istituto Matematica Finanziaria Dell’Università di Torino Serie III* **12** 1–36.
- [6] CONT, R. and TANKOV, P. (2004). *Financial Modelling with Jump Processes*. Chapman & Hall/CRC Financial Mathematics Series. CRC Press/CRC, Boca Raton, FL. [MR2042661](https://doi.org/10.1080/00036810410001633195)
- [7] CUTURI, M. (2013). Sinkhorn distances: Lightspeed computation of optimal transport. In *Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems* **26** 2292–2300.
- [8] DALEY, D. J. and VERE-JONES, D. (2003). *An Introduction to the Theory of Point Processes. Vol. I: Elementary Theory and Methods*, 2nd ed. Probability and Its Applications (New York). Springer, New York. [MR1950431](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4612-0719-3)
- [9] DE BLASI, P., PECCATI, G. and PRÜNSTER, I. (2009). Asymptotics for posterior hazards. *Ann. Statist.* **37** 1906–1945. [MR2533475 https://doi.org/10.1214/08-AOS631](https://doi.org/10.1214/08-AOS631)
- [10] DE FINETTI, B. (1938). Sur la condition d’Equivalence partielle. *Actual. Sci. Ind.* **739** 5–18.
- [11] DOKSUM, K. (1974). Tailfree and neutral random probabilities and their posterior distributions. *Ann. Probab.* **2** 183–201. [MR0373081 https://doi.org/10.1214/aop/1176996703](https://doi.org/10.1214/aop/1176996703)

MSC2020 subject classifications. 62C10, 60G57, 60G09.

Key words and phrases. Bayesian nonparametrics, completely random measures, completely random vectors, compound Poisson, dependence, independent increments, Lévy copula, Wasserstein distance.

- [12] DYKSTRA, R. L. and LAUD, P. (1981). A Bayesian nonparametric approach to reliability. *Ann. Statist.* **9** 356–367. [MR0606619](#)
- [13] EPIFANI, I. and LIJOI, A. (2010). Nonparametric priors for vectors of survival functions. *Statist. Sinica* **20** 1455–1484. [MR2777332](#)
- [14] FLAMARY, R. and COURT, N. (2017). POT Python Optimal Transport library.
- [15] GHOSAL, S. and VAN DER VAART, A. (2017). *Fundamentals of Nonparametric Bayesian Inference*. Cambridge Series in Statistical and Probabilistic Mathematics **44**. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge. [MR3587782](#) <https://doi.org/10.1017/9781139029834>
- [16] GINI, C. (1914). Di una misura delle relazioni tra le graduatorie di due caratteri. *Saggi Monografici del Comune di Roma, Tip. Cecchini*.
- [17] GRIFFIN, J. E. and LEISEN, F. (2017). Compound random measures and their use in Bayesian nonparametrics. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **79** 525–545. [MR3611758](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/rssb.12176>
- [18] GRIFFITHS, R. C. and MILNE, R. K. (1978). A class of bivariate Poisson processes. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **8** 380–395. [MR0512608](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/0047-259X\(78\)90061-1](https://doi.org/10.1016/0047-259X(78)90061-1)
- [19] HJORT, N. L. (1990). Nonparametric Bayes estimators based on beta processes in models for life history data. *Ann. Statist.* **18** 1259–1294. [MR1062708](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176347749>
- [20] HJORT, N. L., HOLMES, C. C., MÜLLER, P. and WALKER, S. G. (2010). *Bayesian Nonparametrics*. Camb. Ser. Stat. Probab. Math. **28**. Cambridge University Press, Cambridge. [MR2722987](#) <https://doi.org/10.1017/CBO9780511802478>
- [21] ISHWARAN, H. and JAMES, L. F. (2001). Gibbs sampling methods for stick-breaking priors. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **96** 161–173. [MR1952729](#) <https://doi.org/10.1198/016214501750332758>
- [22] ISHWARAN, H. and JAMES, L. F. (2004). Computational methods for multiplicative intensity models using weighted gamma processes: Proportional hazards, marked point processes, and panel count data. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **99** 175–190. [MR2054297](#) <https://doi.org/10.1198/016214504000000179>
- [23] JAMES, L. F. (2005). Bayesian Poisson process partition calculus with an application to Bayesian Lévy moving averages. *Ann. Statist.* **33** 1771–1799. [MR2166562](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/009053605000000336>
- [24] KALLENBERG, O. (2017). *Random Measures, Theory and Applications*. Probability Theory and Stochastic Modelling **77**. Springer, Cham. [MR3642325](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-319-41598-7>
- [25] KALLSEN, J. and TANKOV, P. (2006). Characterization of dependence of multidimensional Lévy processes using Lévy copulas. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **97** 1551–1572. [MR2275419](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2005.11.001>
- [26] KINGMAN, J. F. C. (1967). Completely random measures. *Pacific J. Math.* **21** 59–78. [MR0210185](#)
- [27] KNOTT, M. and SMITH, C. S. (1984). On the optimal mapping of distributions. *J. Optim. Theory Appl.* **43** 39–49. [MR0745785](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00934745>
- [28] LAU, J. W., CRIPPS, E. and HUI, W. (2020). Variational inference for multiplicative intensity models. *Statist. Probab. Lett.* **161** 108720, 6. [MR4065484](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.spl.2020.108720>
- [29] LEISEN, F. and LIJOI, A. (2011). Vectors of two-parameter Poisson–Dirichlet processes. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **102** 482–495. [MR2755010](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2010.10.008>
- [30] LEISEN, F., LIJOI, A. and SPANÓ, D. (2013). A vector of Dirichlet processes. *Electron. J. Stat.* **7** 62–90. [MR3020414](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/12-EJS764>
- [31] LIJOI, A. and NIPOTI, B. (2014). A class of hazard rate mixtures for combining survival data from different experiments. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **109** 802–814. [MR3223751](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2013.869499>
- [32] LIJOI, A., NIPOTI, B. and PRÜNSTER, I. (2014). Bayesian inference with dependent normalized completely random measures. *Bernoulli* **20** 1260–1291. [MR3217444](#) <https://doi.org/10.3150/13-BEJ521>
- [33] LIJOI, A. and PRÜNSTER, I. (2010). Models beyond the Dirichlet process. In *Bayesian Nonparametrics*. Camb. Ser. Stat. Probab. Math. **28** 80–136. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge. [MR2730661](#)
- [34] LO, A. Y. and WENG, C.-S. (1989). On a class of Bayesian nonparametric estimates. II. Hazard rate estimates. *Ann. Inst. Statist. Math.* **41** 227–245. [MR1006487](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/BF00049393>
- [35] MACEACHERN, S. N. (1999). Dependent nonparametric processes. In *ASA Proceedings of the Section on Bayesian Statistical Science*. American Statistical Association, Alexandria, VA.
- [36] MACEACHERN, S. N. (2000). Dependent Dirichlet processes. Technical Report, The Ohio State Univ.
- [37] MARIUCCI, E. and REISS, M. (2018). Wasserstein and total variation distance between marginals of Lévy processes. *Electron. J. Stat.* **12** 2482–2514. [MR3833470](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/18-EJS1456>
- [38] MÜLLER, P., QUINTANA, F. A. and PAGE, G. (2018). Nonparametric Bayesian inference in applications (with discussion). *Stat. Methods Appl.* **27** 175–251. [MR3807363](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10260-017-0405-z>

- [39] MÜLLER, P., QUINTANA, F. A., JARA, A. and HANSON, T. (2015). *Bayesian Nonparametric Data Analysis. Springer Series in Statistics*. Springer, Cham. MR3309338 <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-319-18968-0>
- [40] NGUYEN, X. (2013). Convergence of latent mixing measures in finite and infinite mixture models. *Ann. Statist.* **41** 370–400. MR3059422 <https://doi.org/10.1214/12-AOS1065>
- [41] NGUYEN, X. (2016). Borrowing strength in hierarchical Bayes: Posterior concentration of the Dirichlet base measure. *Bernoulli* **22** 1535–1571. MR3474825 <https://doi.org/10.3150/15-BEJ703>
- [42] PANARETOS, V. M. and ZEMEL, Y. (2019). Statistical aspects of Wasserstein distances. *Annu. Rev. Stat. Appl.* **6** 405–431. MR3939527 <https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-statistics-030718-104938>
- [43] PECCATI, G. and PRÜNSTER, I. (2008). Linear and quadratic functionals of random hazard rates: An asymptotic analysis. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* **18** 1910–1943. MR2462554 <https://doi.org/10.1214/07-AAP509>
- [44] RACHEV, S. (1985). The Monge–Kantorovich mass transference problem and its stochastic applications. *Theory Probab. Appl.* **29** 647–676. MR0773434
- [45] REGAZZINI, E., LIJOI, A. and PRÜNSTER, I. (2003). Distributional results for means of normalized random measures with independent increments. *Ann. Statist.* **31** 560–585. MR1983542 <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1051027881>
- [46] RIVA-PALACIO, A. and LEISEN, F. (2021). Compound vectors of subordinators and their associated positive Lévy copulas. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **183** 104728. MR4219330 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jmva.2021.104728>
- [47] RÜSCHENDORF, L. (1991). Fréchet-bounds and their applications. In *Advances in Probability Distributions with Given Marginals (Rome, 1990)*. *Math. Appl.* **67** 151–187. Kluwer Academic, Dordrecht. MR1215951
- [48] SATO, K. (1999). *Lévy Processes and Infinitely Divisible Distributions. Cambridge Studies in Advanced Mathematics* **68**. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge. Translated from the 1990 Japanese original, Revised by the author. MR1739520
- [49] SETHURAMAN, J. (1994). A constructive definition of Dirichlet priors. *Statist. Sinica* **4** 639–650. MR1309433
- [50] TANKOV, P. (2003). Dependence structure of spectrally positive multidimensional Lévy processes. Unpublished Manuscript.
- [51] VILLANI, C. (2008). *Optimal Transport: Old and New*. Springer, Berlin Heidelberg.

BRIDGING CONVEX AND NONCONVEX OPTIMIZATION IN ROBUST PCA: NOISE, OUTLIERS AND MISSING DATA

BY YUXIN CHEN^{1,??}, JIANQING FAN^{2,*}, CONG MA^{3,??} AND YULING YAN^{2,†}

¹Department of Electrical and Computer Engineering, Princeton University, ??yuxin.chen@princeton.edu

²Department of Operations Research and Financial Engineering, Princeton University, *jqfan@princeton.edu,
†yulingy@princeton.edu

³Department of Statistics, University of Chicago, ??congm@uchicago.edu

This paper delivers improved theoretical guarantees for the convex programming approach in low-rank matrix estimation, in the presence of (1) random noise, (2) gross sparse outliers and (3) missing data. This problem, often dubbed as *robust principal component analysis* (*robust PCA*), finds applications in various domains. Despite the wide applicability of convex relaxation, the available statistical support (particularly the stability analysis in the presence of random noise) remains highly suboptimal, which we strengthen in this paper. When the unknown matrix is well conditioned, incoherent and of constant rank, we demonstrate that a principled convex program achieves near-optimal statistical accuracy, in terms of both the Euclidean loss and the ℓ_∞ loss. All of this happens even when nearly a constant fraction of observations are corrupted by outliers with arbitrary magnitudes. The key analysis idea lies in bridging the convex program in use and an auxiliary nonconvex optimization algorithm, and hence the title of this paper.

REFERENCES

- AGARWAL, A., NEGAHBAN, S. and WAINWRIGHT, M. J. (2012). Noisy matrix decomposition via convex relaxation: Optimal rates in high dimensions. *Ann. Statist.* **40** 1171–1197. [MR2985947](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/12-AOS1000>
- AHMED, A., RECHT, B. and ROMBERG, J. (2014). Blind deconvolution using convex programming. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **60** 1711–1732. [MR3168432](#) <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2013.2294644>
- CAI, H., CAI, J.-F. and WEI, K. (2019). Accelerated alternating projections for robust principal component analysis. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **20** Paper No. 20, 33. [MR3911427](#)
- CAI, T. T., MA, Z. and WU, Y. (2013). Sparse PCA: Optimal rates and adaptive estimation. *Ann. Statist.* **41** 3074–3110. [MR3161458](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/13-AOS1178>
- CAI, J.-F. and WEI, K. (2018). Solving systems of phaseless equations via Riemannian optimization with optimal sampling complexity. Preprint. [arXiv:1809.02773](#).
- CANDÈS, E. J., LI, X. and SOLTANOLKOTABI, M. (2015). Phase retrieval via Wirtinger flow: Theory and algorithms. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **61** 1985–2007. [MR3332993](#) <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2015.2399924>
- CANDÈS, E. and PLAN, Y. (2010). Matrix completion with noise. *Proc. IEEE* **98** 925–936.
- CANDÈS, E. J. and RECHT, B. (2009). Exact matrix completion via convex optimization. *Found. Comput. Math.* **9** 717–772. [MR2565240](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10208-009-9045-5>
- CANDÈS, E. J. and TAO, T. (2010). The power of convex relaxation: Near-optimal matrix completion. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **56** 2053–2080. [MR2723472](#) <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2010.2044061>
- CANDÈS, E. J., LI, X., MA, Y. and WRIGHT, J. (2011). Robust principal component analysis? *J. ACM* **58** Art. 11, 37. [MR2811000](#) <https://doi.org/10.1145/1970392.1970395>
- CHANDRASEKARAN, V., PARRILO, P. A. and WILLSKY, A. S. (2012). Latent variable graphical model selection via convex optimization. *Ann. Statist.* **40** 1935–1967. [MR3059067](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/11-AOS949>
- CHANDRASEKARAN, V., SANGHAVI, S., PARRILO, P. A. and WILLSKY, A. S. (2011). Rank-sparsity incoherence for matrix decomposition. *SIAM J. Optim.* **21** 572–596. [MR2817479](#) <https://doi.org/10.1137/090761793>
- CHARISOPOULOS, V., DAVIS, D., DÍAZ, M. and DRUSVYATSKIY, D. (2019). Composite optimization for robust blind deconvolution. Preprint. [arXiv:1901.01624](#).

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62F10; secondary 62B10.

Key words and phrases. Robust principal component analysis, convex relaxation, ℓ_∞ guarantees, leave-one-out analysis.

- CHEN, Y. (2015). Incoherence-optimal matrix completion. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **61** 2909–2923. [MR3342311 https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2015.2415195](https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2015.2415195)
- CHEN, Y. and CANDÈS, E. J. (2017). Solving random quadratic systems of equations is nearly as easy as solving linear systems. *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.* **70** 822–883. [MR3628877 https://doi.org/10.1002/cpa.21638](https://doi.org/10.1002/cpa.21638)
- CHEN, Y. and CANDÈS, E. J. (2018). The projected power method: An efficient algorithm for joint alignment from pairwise differences. *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.* **71** 1648–1714. [MR3847751 https://doi.org/10.1002/cpa.21760](https://doi.org/10.1002/cpa.21760)
- CHEN, Y. and CHI, Y. (2014). Robust spectral compressed sensing via structured matrix completion. *IEEE Trans. Inf. Theory* **60** 6576–6601. [MR3265040 https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2014.2343623](https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2014.2343623)
- CHEN, Y., GUIBAS, L. J. and HUANG, Q. (2014). Near-optimal joint optimal matching via convex relaxation. In *International Conference on Machine Learning (ICML)* 100–108.
- CHEN, J., LIU, D. and LI, X. (2020). Nonconvex rectangular matrix completion via gradient descent without $\ell_{2,\infty}$ regularization. *IEEE Trans. Inform. Theory* **66** 5806–5841. [MR4158648 https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2020.2992234](https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2020.2992234)
- CHEN, Y. and WAINWRIGHT, M. J. (2015). Fast low-rank estimation by projected gradient descent: General statistical and algorithmic guarantees. [arXiv:1509.03025](https://arxiv.org/abs/1509.03025).
- CHEN, Y., JALALI, A., SANGHAVI, S. and CARAMANIS, C. (2013). Low-rank matrix recovery from errors and erasures. *IEEE Transactions on Information Theory* **59** 4324–4337.
- CHEN, Y., JALALI, A., SANGHAVI, S. and XU, H. (2014). Clustering partially observed graphs via convex optimization. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **15** 2213–2238. [MR3231602 https://doi.org/10.1162/jmlr.2014.15.1](https://doi.org/10.1162/jmlr.2014.15.1)
- CHEN, Y., CHI, Y., FAN, J. and MA, C. (2019a). Gradient descent with random initialization: Fast global convergence for nonconvex phase retrieval. *Math. Program.* **176** 5–37. [MR3960803 https://doi.org/10.1007/s10107-019-01363-6](https://doi.org/10.1007/s10107-019-01363-6)
- CHEN, Y., FAN, J., MA, C. and YAN, Y. (2019b). Inference and uncertainty quantification for noisy matrix completion. *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA* **116** 22931–22937. [MR4036123 https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.1910053116](https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.1910053116)
- CHEN, Y., CHI, Y., FAN, J., MA, C. and YAN, Y. (2020a). Noisy matrix completion: Understanding statistical guarantees for convex relaxation via nonconvex optimization. *SIAM J. Optim.* **30** 3098–3121. [MR4167625 https://doi.org/10.1137/19M1290000](https://doi.org/10.1137/19M1290000)
- CHEN, Y., CHI, Y., FAN, J. and MA, C. (2020b). Spectral methods for data science: A statistical perspective. Preprint. [arXiv:2012.08496](https://arxiv.org/abs/2012.08496).
- CHEN, Y., FAN, J., WANG, B. and YAN, Y. (2020c). Convex and nonconvex optimization are both minimax-optimal for noisy blind deconvolution. Preprint. [arXiv:2008.01724](https://arxiv.org/abs/2008.01724).
- CHEN, Y., FAN, J., MA, C. and YAN, Y. (2021). Supplement to “Bridging convex and nonconvex optimization in robust PCA: Noise, outliers and missing data.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2066SUPP>
- CHERAPANAMJERI, Y., GUPTA, K. and JAIN, P. (2017). Nearly optimal robust matrix completion. In *Proceedings of the 34th International Conference on Machine Learning* **70** 797–805. JMLR.org.
- CHI, Y., LU, Y. M. and CHEN, Y. (2019). Nonconvex optimization meets low-rank matrix factorization: An overview. *IEEE Trans. Signal Process.* **67** 5239–5269. [MR4016283 https://doi.org/10.1109/TSP.2019.2937282](https://doi.org/10.1109/TSP.2019.2937282)
- DAVENPORT, M. A. and ROMBERG, J. (2016). An overview of low-rank matrix recovery from incomplete observations. *IEEE Journal of Selected Topics in Signal Processing* **10** 608–622.
- DONOHO, D. and GAVISH, M. (2014). Minimax risk of matrix denoising by singular value thresholding. *Ann. Statist.* **42** 2413–2440. [MR3269984 https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1257](https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1257)
- DRUSVYATSKIY, D., IOFFE, A. D. and LEWIS, A. S. (2021). Nonsmooth optimization using Taylor-like models: Error bounds, convergence, and termination criteria. *Math. Program.* **185** 357–383. [MR4201717 https://doi.org/10.1007/s10107-019-01432-w](https://doi.org/10.1007/s10107-019-01432-w)
- FAN, J., FAN, Y. and LV, J. (2008). High dimensional covariance matrix estimation using a factor model. *J. Econometrics* **147** 186–197. [MR2472991 https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jeconom.2008.09.017](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jeconom.2008.09.017)
- FAN, J., LIAO, Y. and MINCHEVA, M. (2013). Large covariance estimation by thresholding principal orthogonal complements. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **75** 603–680. [MR3091653 https://doi.org/10.1111/rssb.12016](https://doi.org/10.1111/rssb.12016)
- FAN, J., WANG, W. and ZHONG, Y. (2017). An ℓ_∞ eigenvector perturbation bound and its application to robust covariance estimation. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **18** Paper No. 207, 42. [MR3827095 https://doi.org/10.1162/jmlr.2017.18.1](https://doi.org/10.1162/jmlr.2017.18.1)
- FAN, J., WANG, W. and ZHONG, Y. (2019). Robust covariance estimation for approximate factor models. *J. Econometrics* **208** 5–22. [MR3906959 https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jeconom.2018.09.003](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jeconom.2018.09.003)
- FAN, J., SUN, Q., ZHOU, W.-X. and ZHU, Z. (2018). Principal component analysis for big data. Preprint. [arXiv:1801.01602](https://arxiv.org/abs/1801.01602).
- FENG, J., XU, H. and YAN, S. (2013). Online robust PCA via stochastic optimization. In *Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems* 404–412.

- GANESH, A., WRIGHT, J., LI, X., CANDLES, E. J. and MA, Y. (2010). Dense error correction for low-rank matrices via principal component pursuit. In *2010 IEEE International Symposium on Information Theory* 1513–1517. IEEE.
- GOLDFARB, D., MA, S. and SCHEINBERG, K. (2013). Fast alternating linearization methods for minimizing the sum of two convex functions. *Math. Program.* **141** 349–382. MR3097290 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10107-012-0530-2>
- GROSS, D. (2011). Recovering low-rank matrices from few coefficients in any basis. *IEEE Trans. Inform. Theory* **57** 1548–1566. MR2815834 <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2011.2104999>
- GU, Q., WANG, Z. W. and LIU, H. (2016). Low-rank and sparse structure pursuit via alternating minimization. In *Artificial Intelligence and Statistics* 600–609.
- GUO, H., QIU, C. and VASWANI, N. (2014). An online algorithm for separating sparse and low-dimensional signal sequences from their sum. *IEEE Trans. Signal Process.* **62** 4284–4297. MR3260427 <https://doi.org/10.1109/TSP.2014.2331612>
- HSU, D., KAKADE, S. M. and ZHANG, T. (2011). Robust matrix decomposition with sparse corruptions. *IEEE Trans. Inform. Theory* **57** 7221–7234. MR2883652 <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2011.2158250>
- HUANG, Q. and GUIBAS, L. (2013). Consistent shape maps via semidefinite programming. *Computer Graphics Forum* **32** 177–186.
- JAIN, P., NETRAPALLI, P. and SANGHAVI, S. (2013). Low-rank matrix completion using alternating minimization (extended abstract). In *STOC’13—Proceedings of the 2013 ACM Symposium on Theory of Computing* 665–674. ACM, New York. MR3210828 <https://doi.org/10.1145/2488608.2488693>
- JOLLIFFE, I. T. (1986). *Principal Component Analysis*. Springer Series in Statistics. Springer, New York. MR0841268 <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4757-1904-8>
- KESHAVAN, R. H., MONTANARI, A. and OH, S. (2010). Matrix completion from a few entries. *IEEE Trans. Inform. Theory* **56** 2980–2998. MR2683452 <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2010.2046205>
- KLOPP, O. (2014). Noisy low-rank matrix completion with general sampling distribution. *Bernoulli* **20** 282–303. MR3160583 <https://doi.org/10.3150/12-BEJ486>
- KLOPP, O., LOUNICI, K. and TSYBAKOV, A. B. (2017). Robust matrix completion. *Probab. Theory Related Fields* **169** 523–564. MR3704775 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s00440-016-0736-y>
- KOLTCHINSKII, V., LOUNICI, K. and TSYBAKOV, A. B. (2011). Nuclear-norm penalization and optimal rates for noisy low-rank matrix completion. *Ann. Statist.* **39** 2302–2329. MR2906869 <https://doi.org/10.1214/11-AOS894>
- KRAHMER, F. and STÖGER, D. (2021). On the convex geometry of blind deconvolution and matrix completion. *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.* **74** 790–832. MR4221934
- LI, X. (2013). Compressed sensing and matrix completion with constant proportion of corruptions. *Constr. Approx.* **37** 73–99. MR3010211 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s00365-012-9176-9>
- LI, Y., MA, C., CHEN, Y. and CHI, Y. (2019). Nonconvex matrix factorization from rank-one measurements. In *The 22nd International Conference on Artificial Intelligence and Statistics* 1496–1505.
- MA, S. and AYBAT, N. S. (2018). Efficient optimization algorithms for robust principal component analysis and its variants. *Proceedings of the IEEE* **106** 1411–1426.
- MA, C., WANG, K., CHI, Y. and CHEN, Y. (2020). Implicit regularization in nonconvex statistical estimation: Gradient descent converges linearly for phase retrieval, matrix completion, and blind deconvolution. *Found. Comput. Math.* **20** 451–632. MR4099988 <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10208-019-09429-9>
- MAZUMDER, R., HASTIE, T. and TIBSHIRANI, R. (2010). Spectral regularization algorithms for learning large incomplete matrices. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **11** 2287–2322. MR2719857
- NEGAHBAN, S. and WAINWRIGHT, M. J. (2012). Restricted strong convexity and weighted matrix completion: Optimal bounds with noise. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **13** 1665–1697. MR2930649
- NETRAPALLI, P., JAIN, P. and SANGHAVI, S. (2015). Phase retrieval using alternating minimization. *IEEE Trans. Signal Process.* **63** 4814–4826. MR3385838 <https://doi.org/10.1109/TSP.2015.2448516>
- NETRAPALLI, P., NIRANJAN, U., SANGHAVI, S., ANANDKUMAR, A. and JAIN, P. (2014). Non-convex robust PCA. In *Advances in Neural Information Processing Systems* 1107–1115.
- PEARSON, K. (1901). LIII. On lines and planes of closest fit to systems of points in space. *The London, Edinburgh, and Dublin Philosophical Magazine and Journal of Science* **2** 559–572.
- QIU, C. and VASWANI, N. (2010). Real-time robust principal components’ pursuit. In *2010 48th Annual Allerton Conference on Communication, Control, and Computing (Allerton)* 591–598. IEEE.
- QIU, C., VASWANI, N., LOIS, B. and HOGGEN, L. (2014). Recursive robust PCA or recursive sparse recovery in large but structured noise. *IEEE Trans. Inform. Theory* **60** 5007–5039. MR3245369 <https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2014.2331344>
- SHEN, Y., WEN, Z. and ZHANG, Y. (2014). Augmented Lagrangian alternating direction method for matrix separation based on low-rank factorization. *Optim. Methods Softw.* **29** 239–263. MR3175484 <https://doi.org/10.1080/10556788.2012.700713>

- SINGER, A. (2011). Angular synchronization by eigenvectors and semidefinite programming. *Appl. Comput. Harmon. Anal.* **30** 20–36. [MR2737931 https://doi.org/10.1016/j.acha.2010.02.001](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.acha.2010.02.001)
- SREBRO, N. and SHRAIBMAN, A. (2005). Rank, trace-norm and max-norm. In *Learning Theory. Lecture Notes in Computer Science* **3559** 545–560. Springer, Berlin. [MR2203286 https://doi.org/10.1007/11503415_37](https://doi.org/10.1007/11503415_37)
- SUN, R. and LUO, Z.-Q. (2016). Guaranteed matrix completion via non-convex factorization. *IEEE Trans. Inform. Theory* **62** 6535–6579. [MR3565131 https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2016.2598574](https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2016.2598574)
- TAO, M. and YUAN, X. (2011). Recovering low-rank and sparse components of matrices from incomplete and noisy observations. *SIAM J. Optim.* **21** 57–81. [MR2765489 https://doi.org/10.1137/100781894](https://doi.org/10.1137/100781894)
- VASWANI, N. and NARAYANAMURTHY, P. (2018). Static and dynamic robust PCA and matrix completion: A review. *Proceedings of the IEEE* **106** 1359–1379.
- VERSHYNIN, R. (2012). Introduction to the non-asymptotic analysis of random matrices. In *Compressed Sensing* 210–268. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge. [MR2963170](https://doi.org/10.1017/9781107320733.008)
- WANG, G., GIANNAKIS, G. B. and ELDAR, Y. C. (2018). Solving systems of random quadratic equations via truncated amplitude flow. *IEEE Trans. Inform. Theory* **64** 773–794. [MR3762591 https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2017.2756858](https://doi.org/10.1109/TIT.2017.2756858)
- WEI, K., CAI, J.-F., CHAN, T. F. and LEUNG, S. (2016). Guarantees of Riemannian optimization for low rank matrix recovery. *SIAM J. Matrix Anal. Appl.* **37** 1198–1222. [MR3543156 https://doi.org/10.1137/15M1050525](https://doi.org/10.1137/15M1050525)
- WONG, R. K. W. and LEE, T. C. M. (2017). Matrix completion with noisy entries and outliers. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **18** Paper No. 147, 25. [MR3763781](https://doi.org/10.26434/chemrxiv-2017-07-00000)
- YI, X., PARK, D., CHEN, Y. and CARAMANIS, C. (2016). Fast algorithms for robust PCA via gradient descent. In *NIPS* 4152–4160.
- ZHAN, J., LOIS, B., GUO, H. and VASWANI, N. (2016). Online (and offline) robust PCA: Novel algorithms and performance guarantees. In *Artificial Intelligence and Statistics* 1488–1496.
- ZHANG, H., CHI, Y. and LIANG, Y. (2016). Provable non-convex phase retrieval with outliers: Median truncated Wirtinger flow. In *International Conference on Machine Learning* 1022–1031.
- ZHANG, X., WANG, L. W. and GU, Q. (2018). A unified framework for nonconvex low-rank plus sparse matrix recovery. In *International Conference on Artificial Intelligence and Statistics*.
- ZHENG, Q. and LAFFERTY, J. (2016). Convergence analysis for rectangular matrix completion using Burer–Monteiro factorization and gradient descent. [arXiv:1605.07051](https://arxiv.org/abs/1605.07051).
- ZHOU, Z., LI, X., WRIGHT, J., CANDÈS, E. and MA, Y. (2010). Stable principal component pursuit. In *International Symposium on Information Theory* 1518–1522.

EFFICIENCY OF DELAYED-ACCEPTANCE RANDOM WALK METROPOLIS ALGORITHMS

BY CHRIS SHERLOCK^{1,??}, ALEXANDRE H. THIERY^{2,??} AND ANDREW GOLIGHTLY^{3,??}

¹Department of Mathematics and Statistics, Lancaster University, ??c.sherlock@lancaster.ac.uk

²Department of Statistics and Applied Probability, National University of Singapore, ??a.h.thiery@gmail.com

³School of Mathematics, Statistics and Physics, Newcastle University, ??andrew.golightly@ncl.ac.uk

Delayed-acceptance Metropolis–Hastings and delayed-acceptance pseudo-marginal Metropolis–Hastings algorithms can be applied when it is computationally expensive to calculate the true posterior or an unbiased stochastic approximation thereof, but a computationally cheap deterministic approximation is available. An initial accept–reject stage uses the cheap approximation for computing the Metropolis–Hastings ratio; proposals which are accepted at this stage are subjected to a further accept–reject step, which corrects for the error in the approximation. Since the expensive posterior, or the approximation thereof, is only evaluated for proposals which are accepted at the first stage, the cost of the algorithm is reduced and larger scalings may be used.

We focus on the random walk Metropolis (RWM) and consider the delayed-acceptance RWM and the delayed-acceptance pseudo-marginal RWM. We provide a framework for incorporating relatively general deterministic approximations into the theoretical analysis of high-dimensional targets. Justified by diffusion-approximation arguments, we derive expressions for the limiting efficiency and acceptance rates in high-dimensional settings. Finally, these theoretical insights are leveraged to formulate practical guidelines for the efficient tuning of the algorithms. The robustness of these guidelines and predicted properties are verified against simulation studies, all of which are strictly outside of the domain of validity of our limit results.

REFERENCES

- [1] ANDRIEU, C., DOUCET, A. and HOLENSTEIN, R. (2010). Particle Markov chain Monte Carlo methods. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **72** 269–342. MR2758115 <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9868.2009.00736.x>
- [2] ANDRIEU, C. and ROBERTS, G. O. (2009). The pseudo-marginal approach for efficient Monte Carlo computations. *Ann. Statist.* **37** 697–725. MR2502648 <https://doi.org/10.1214/07-AOS574>
- [3] AU, S.-K. and BECK, J. L. (2001). Estimation of small failure probabilities in high dimensions by subset simulation. *Probab. Eng. Mech.* **16** 263–277. [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0266-8920\(01\)00019-4](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0266-8920(01)00019-4)
- [4] BANTERLE, M., GRAZIAN, C., LEE, A. and ROBERT, C. P. (2019). Accelerating Metropolis–Hastings algorithms by delayed acceptance. *Foundations of Data Science* **1** 103–128.
- [5] BEAUMONT, M. A. (2003). Estimation of population growth or decline in genetically monitored populations. *Genetics* **164** 1139–1160.
- [6] BÉDARD, M. (2007). Weak convergence of Metropolis algorithms for non-i.i.d. target distributions. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* **17** 1222–1244. MR2344305 <https://doi.org/10.1214/105051607000000096>
- [7] BÉDARD, M., DOUC, R. and MOULINES, E. (2012). Scaling analysis of multiple-try MCMC methods. *Stochastic Process. Appl.* **122** 758–786. MR2891436 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.spa.2011.11.004>
- [8] BÉDARD, M. and ROSENTHAL, J. S. (2008). Optimal scaling of Metropolis algorithms: Heading toward general target distributions. *Canad. J. Statist.* **36** 483–503. MR2532248 <https://doi.org/10.1002/cjs.5550360401>

MSC2020 subject classifications. 65C05, 65C40, 60F05.

Key words and phrases. Markov chain Monte Carlo, delayed-acceptance, diffusion limit, Pseudo-marginal MCMC, random-walk Metropolis.

- [9] BÉRARD, J., DEL MORAL, P. and DOUCET, A. (2014). A lognormal central limit theorem for particle approximations of normalizing constants. *Electron. J. Probab.* **19** no. 94, 28. [MR3272327](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/EJP.v19-3428>
- [10] BESKOS, A., ROBERTS, G. and STUART, A. (2009). Optimal scalings for local Metropolis–Hastings chains on nonproduct targets in high dimensions. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* **19** 863–898. [MR2537193](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/08-AAP563>
- [11] BOYS, R. J., WILKINSON, D. J. and KIRKWOOD, T. B. L. (2008). Bayesian inference for a discretely observed stochastic kinetic model. *Stat. Comput.* **18** 125–135. [MR2390814](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s11222-007-9043-x>
- [12] BREYER, L. A., PICCIONI, M. and SCARLATTI, S. (2004). Optimal scaling of MaLa for nonlinear regression. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* **14** 1479–1505. [MR2071431](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/105051604000000369>
- [13] BROOKS, S., GELMAN, A., JONES, G. L. and MENG, X.-L., eds. (2011) *Handbook of Markov chain Monte Carlo*. Chapman & Hall/CRC Handbooks of Modern Statistical Methods. CRC Press, Boca Raton, FL. [MR10.1201/b10905](#)
- [14] CATANACH, T. A. and BECK, J. L. (2018). Bayesian updating and uncertainty quantification using sequential tempered MCMC with the rank-one modified Metropolis algorithm. ArXiv E-prints. Available at [arXiv:1804.08738](#).
- [15] CHRISTEN, J. A. and FOX, C. (2005). Markov chain Monte Carlo using an approximation. *J. Comput. Graph. Statist.* **14** 795–810. [MR2211367](#) <https://doi.org/10.1198/106186005X76983>
- [16] CUI, T., FOX, C. and O’SULLIVAN, M. J. (2011). Bayesian calibration of a large-scale geothermal reservoir model by a new adaptive delayed acceptance Metropolis Hastings algorithm. *Water Resour. Res.* **47**.
- [17] DAHLIN, J. and SCHÖN, T. B. (2019). Getting started with particle Metropolis–Hastings for inference in nonlinear dynamical models. ArXiv E-prints. Available at [arXiv:1511.01707](#).
- [18] DEL MORAL, P. (2004). *Feynman–Kac Formulae: Genealogical and Interacting Particle Systems with Applications*. Probability and Its Applications (New York). Springer, New York. [MR2044973](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4684-9393-1>
- [19] DOUCET, A., PITT, M. K., DELIGIANNIDIS, G. and KOHN, R. (2015). Efficient implementation of Markov chain Monte Carlo when using an unbiased likelihood estimator. *Biometrika* **102** 295–313. [MR3371005](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asu075>
- [20] EFENDIEV, Y., DATTA-GUPTA, A., GINTING, V., MA, X. and MALLICK, B. (2005). An efficient two-stage Markov chain Monte Carlo method for dynamic data integration. *Water Resour. Res.* **41**.
- [21] EFENDIEV, Y., HOU, T. and LUO, W. (2006). Preconditioning Markov chain Monte Carlo simulations using coarse-scale models. *SIAM J. Sci. Comput.* **28** 776–803. [MR2231730](#) <https://doi.org/10.1137/050628568>
- [22] EVERITT, R. G. and ROWIŃSKA, P. A. (2017). Delayed acceptance ABC-SMC. ArXiv E-prints. Available at [arXiv:1708.02230](#).
- [23] FEARNEHEAD, P. and SHERLOCK, C. (2006). An exact Gibbs sampler for the Markov-modulated Poisson process. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **68** 767–784. [MR2301294](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9868.2006.00566.x>
- [24] FILIPPONE, M. and GIROLAMI, M. (2014). Pseudo-marginal Bayesian inference for Gaussian processes. *IEEE Trans. Pattern Anal. Mach. Intell.* **36** 2214–2226.
- [25] FLURY, T. and SHEPHARD, N. (2011). Bayesian inference based only on simulated likelihood: Particle filter analysis of dynamic economic models. *Econometric Theory* **27** 933–956. [MR2843833](#) <https://doi.org/10.1017/S0266466610000599>
- [26] FRANKS, J. and VIHOLA, M. (2020). Importance sampling correction versus standard averages of reversible MCMCs in terms of the asymptotic variance. *Stochastic Process. Appl.* **130** 6157–6183. [MR4140030](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.spa.2020.05.006>
- [27] GILKS, W. R., RICHARDSON, S. and SPIEGELHALTER, D. J., eds. (1996) *Markov Chain Monte Carlo in Practice*. Interdisciplinary Statistics. CRC Press, London. [MR1397966](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4899-4485-6>
- [28] GOLIGHTLY, A., HENDERSON, D. A. and SHERLOCK, C. (2015). Delayed acceptance particle MCMC for exact inference in stochastic kinetic models. *Stat. Comput.* **25** 1039–1055. [MR3375634](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s11222-014-9469-x>
- [29] GOLIGHTLY, A. and WILKINSON, D. J. (2011). Bayesian parameter inference for stochastic biochemical network models using particle Markov chain Monte Carlo. *Interface Focus* **1** 807–820. [https://doi.org/10.1098/rsfs.2011.0047](#)
- [30] HIGDON, D. C., REESE, S. J., MOULTON, D., VRUGT, J. A. and FOX, C. (2011). Posterior exploration for computationally intensive forward models. In *Handbook of Markov chain Monte Carlo*, chapter 16 (S. Brooks, A. Gelman, G. L. Jones and X.-L. Meng, eds.) 401–418. CRC Press, Boca Raton, FL.

- [31] KAIPIO, J. and SOMERSALO, E. (2005). *Statistical and Computational Inverse Problems. Applied Mathematical Sciences* **160**. Springer, New York. [MR2102218](#)
- [32] KNAPE, J. and DE VALPINE, P. (2012). Fitting complex population models by combining particle filters with Markov chain Monte Carlo. *Ecology* **93** 256–263.
- [33] LIU, J. S. (2001). *Monte Carlo Strategies in Scientific Computing. Springer Series in Statistics*. Springer, New York. [MR1842342](#)
- [34] MATTINGLY, J. C., PILLAI, N. S. and STUART, A. M. (2012). Diffusion limits of the random walk Metropolis algorithm in high dimensions. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* **22** 881–930. [MR2977981](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/10-AAP754>
- [35] MOULTON, J. D., FOX, C. and SVYATSKIY, D. (2008). Multilevel approximations in sample-based inversion from the Dirichlet-to-Neumann map. *J. Phys., Conf. Ser.* **124**.
- [36] PASARICA, C. and GELMAN, A. (2010). Adaptively scaling the Metropolis algorithm using expected squared jumped distance. *Statist. Sinica* **20** 343–364. [MR2640698](#)
- [37] PITT, M. K., DOS SANTOS SILVA, R., GIORDANI, P. and KOHN, R. (2012). On some properties of Markov chain Monte Carlo simulation methods based on the particle filter. *J. Econometrics* **171** 134–151. [MR2991856](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jeconom.2012.06.004>
- [38] QUIROZ, M., TRAN, M.-N., VILLANI, M. and KOHN, R. (2018). Speeding up MCMC by delayed acceptance and data subsampling. *J. Comput. Graph. Statist.* **27** 12–22. [MR3788297](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/10618600.2017.1307117>
- [39] ROBERTS, G. O., GELMAN, A. and GILKS, W. R. (1997). Weak convergence and optimal scaling of random walk Metropolis algorithms. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* **7** 110–120. [MR1428751](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aoap/1034625254>
- [40] ROBERTS, G. O. and ROSENTHAL, J. S. (1998). Optimal scaling of discrete approximations to Langevin diffusions. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **60** 255–268. [MR1625691](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/1467-9868.00123>
- [41] ROBERTS, G. O. and ROSENTHAL, J. S. (2001). Optimal scaling for various Metropolis–Hastings algorithms. *Statist. Sci.* **16** 351–367. [MR1888450](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/ss/1015346320>
- [42] ROBERTS, G. O. and ROSENTHAL, J. S. (2014). Complexity bounds for Markov chain Monte Carlo algorithms via diffusion limits. *J. Appl. Probab.* **53** 410–420. [MR3514287](#)
- [43] ROBERTS, G. O. and ROSENTHAL, J. S. (2014). Minimising MCMC variance via diffusion limits, with an application to simulated tempering. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* **24** 131–149. [MR3161644](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/12-AAP918>
- [44] SCHMON, S. M., DELIGIANNIDIS, G., DOUCET, A. and PITT, M. K. (2021). Large-sample asymptotics of the pseudo-marginal method. *Biometrika* **108** 37–51. [MR4226188](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asaa044>
- [45] SHERLOCK, C. (2013). Optimal scaling of the random walk Metropolis: General criteria for the 0.234 acceptance rule. *J. Appl. Probab.* **50** 1–15. [MR3076768](#) <https://doi.org/10.1239/jap/1363784420>
- [46] SHERLOCK, C. (2016). Optimal scaling for the pseudo-marginal random walk Metropolis: Insensitivity to the noise generating mechanism. *Methodol. Comput. Appl. Probab.* **18** 869–884. [MR3531025](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s11009-015-9471-6>
- [47] SHERLOCK, C., FEARHEAD, P. and ROBERTS, G. O. (2010). The random walk Metropolis: Linking theory and practice through a case study. *Statist. Sci.* **25** 172–190. [MR2789988](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/10-STS327>
- [48] SHERLOCK, C., GOLIGHTLY, A. and HENDERSON, D. A. (2017). Adaptive, delayed-acceptance MCMC for targets with expensive likelihoods. *J. Comput. Graph. Statist.* **26** 434–444. [MR3640199](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/10618600.2016.1231064>
- [49] SHERLOCK, C. and LEE, A. (2017). Variance bounding of delayed-acceptance kernels. ArXiv E-prints. Available at [arXiv:1706.02142](https://arxiv.org/abs/1706.02142).
- [50] SHERLOCK, C. and ROBERTS, G. (2009). Optimal scaling of the random walk Metropolis on elliptically symmetric unimodal targets. *Bernoulli* **15** 774–798. [MR2555199](#) <https://doi.org/10.3150/08-BEJ176>
- [51] SHERLOCK, C., THIERY, A. H. and GOLIGHTLY, A. (2021). Supplement to “Efficiency of delayed-acceptance random walk Metropolis algorithms.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2068SUPP>
- [52] SHERLOCK, C., THIERY, A. H. and LEE, A. (2017). Pseudo-marginal Metropolis–Hastings sampling using averages of unbiased estimators. *Biometrika* **104** 727–734. [MR3694593](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asx031>
- [53] SHERLOCK, C., THIERY, A. H., ROBERTS, G. O. and ROSENTHAL, J. S. (2015). On the efficiency of pseudo-marginal random walk Metropolis algorithms. *Ann. Statist.* **43** 238–275. [MR3285606](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/14-AOS1278>
- [54] SMITH, M. E. (2011). Estimating nonlinear economic models using surrogate transitions. Available from https://files.nyu.edu/mes473/public/Smith_Surrogate.pdf.

- [55] STUART, A. M. (2010). Inverse problems: A Bayesian perspective. *Acta Numer.* **19** 451–559. [MR2652785](#)
<https://doi.org/10.1017/S0962492910000061>
- [56] VIHOLA, M., HELSKE, J. and FRANKS, J. (2016). Importance sampling type estimators based on approximate marginal MCMC. Available at <https://doi.org/10.1111/sjos.12492>.
- [57] YANG, J., ROBERTS, G. O. and ROSENTHAL, J. S. (2020). Optimal scaling of random-walk Metropolis algorithms on general target distributions. *Stochastic Process. Appl.* **130** 6094–6132. [MR4140028](#)
<https://doi.org/10.1016/j.spa.2020.05.004>
- [58] ZANELLA, G., BÉDARD, M. and KENDALL, W. S. (2017). A Dirichlet form approach to MCMC optimal scaling. *Stochastic Process. Appl.* **127** 4053–4082. [MR3718106](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.spa.2017.03.021>

SEMPARAMETRIC OPTIMAL ESTIMATION WITH NONIGNORABLE NONRESPONSE DATA

BY KOSUKE MORIKAWA^{1,??} AND JAE KWANG KIM^{2,??}

¹Graduate School of Engineering Science, Osaka University, ??morikawa@sigmath.es.osaka-u.ac.jp

²Department of Statistics, Iowa State University, ??jkim@iastate.edu

When the response mechanism is believed to be not missing at random (NMAR), a valid analysis requires stronger assumptions on the response mechanism than standard statistical methods would otherwise require. Semiparametric estimators have been developed under the parametric model assumptions on the response mechanism. In this paper, a new statistical test is proposed to guarantee model identifiability without using instrumental variable assumption. Furthermore, we develop optimal semiparametric estimation for parameters such as the population mean. Specifically, we propose two semiparametric optimal estimators that do not require any model assumptions other than the response mechanism. Asymptotic properties of the proposed estimators are discussed. An extensive simulation study is presented to compare with some existing methods. We present an application of our method using Korean labor and income panel survey data.

REFERENCES

- [1] BERRETT, T. B. and SAMWORTH, R. J. (2019). Nonparametric independence testing via mutual information. *Biometrika* **106** 547–566. [MR3992389](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asz024>
- [2] BICKEL, P. J., KLAASSEN, C. A. J., RITOV, Y. and WELLNER, J. A. (1998). *Efficient and Adaptive Estimation for Semiparametric Models*. Springer, New York. [MR1623559](#)
- [3] CHANG, T. and KOTT, P. S. (2008). Using calibration weighting to adjust for nonresponse under a plausible model. *Biometrika* **95** 555–571. [MR2443175](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asn022>
- [4] CHEN, S. and HAZIZA, D. (2017). Multiply robust imputation procedures for the treatment of item nonresponse in surveys. *Biometrika* **104** 439–453. [MR3698264](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asx007>
- [5] CHERNOZHUKOV, V., CHETVERIKOV, D., DEMIRER, M., DUFLO, E., HANSEN, C., NEWEY, W. and ROBINS, J. (2018). Double/debiased machine learning for treatment and structural parameters. *Econom. J.* **21** C1–C68. [MR3769544](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/ectj.12097>
- [6] D’HAULTFOEUILLE, X. (2010). A new instrumental method for dealing with endogenous selection. *J. Econometrics* **154** 1–15. [MR2558947](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jeconom.2009.06.005>
- [7] DIGGLE, P. and KENWARD, M. G. (1994). Informative drop-out in longitudinal data analysis. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. C. Appl. Stat.* **43** 49–93.
- [8] DOMÍNGUEZ, M. A. and LOBATO, I. N. (2004). Consistent estimation of models defined by conditional moment restrictions. *Econometrica* **72** 1601–1615. [MR2078215](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1468-0262.2004.00545.x>
- [9] EUBANK, R. L. and HART, J. D. (1992). Testing goodness-of-fit in regression via order selection criteria. *Ann. Statist.* **20** 1412–1425. [MR1186256](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1176348775>
- [10] FITZMAURICE, G. M., LIPSITZ, S. R., MOLENBERGHS, G. and IBRAHIM, J. G. (2005). A protective estimator for longitudinal binary data subject to non-ignorable non-monotone missingness. *J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. A* **168** 723–735. [MR2205403](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-985X.2005.00374.x>
- [11] GREENLEES, J. S., REECE, W. S. and ZIESCHANG, K. D. (1982). Imputation of missing values when the probability of response depends on the variable being imputed. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **77** 251–261.
- [12] GRETTON, A., FUKUMIZU, K., TEO, C. H., SONG, L., SCHÖLKOPF, B. and SMOLA, A. (2008). A kernel statistical test of independence. *NeurIPS* **20** 585–592.
- [13] GRETTON, A., HERBRICH, R., SMOLA, A., BOUSQUET, O. and SCHÖLKOPF, B. (2005). Kernel methods for measuring independence. *J. Mach. Learn. Res.* **6** 2075–2129. [MR2249882](#)

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62F35, 62G20; secondary 62G10.

Key words and phrases. Estimating functions, identification, incomplete data, not missing at random (NMAR), semiparametric efficient estimation.

- [14] HAN, P. (2014). Multiply robust estimation in regression analysis with missing data. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **109** 1159–1173. [MR3265688](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2014.880058>
- [15] KANAMORI, T., SUZUKI, T. and SUGIYAMA, M. (2012). Statistical analysis of kernel-based least-squares density-ratio estimation. *Mach. Learn.* **86** 335–367. [MR2897527](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/s10994-011-5266-3>
- [16] KIM, J. K. (2011). Parametric fractional imputation for missing data analysis. *Biometrika* **98** 119–132. [MR2804214](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asq073>
- [17] KIM, J. K. and YU, C. L. (2011). A semiparametric estimation of mean functionals with nonignorable missing data. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **106** 157–165. [MR2816710](#) <https://doi.org/10.1198/jasa.2011.tm10104>
- [18] LIANG, K. Y. and ZEGER, S. L. (1986). Longitudinal data analysis using generalized linear models. *Biometrika* **73** 13–22. [MR0836430](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/73.1.13>
- [19] LITTLE, R. J. A. and RUBIN, D. B. (2002). *Statistical Analysis with Missing Data*, 2nd ed. *Wiley Series in Probability and Statistics*. Wiley, Hoboken, NJ. [MR1925014](#) <https://doi.org/10.1002/9781119013563>
- [20] LIU, C. (2004). Robit regression: A simple robust alternative to logistic and probit regression. In *Applied Bayesian Modeling and Causal Inference from Incomplete-Data Perspectives*. *Wiley Ser. Probab. Stat.* 227–238. Wiley, Chichester. [MR2138259](#) <https://doi.org/10.1002/0470090456.ch21>
- [21] LOUIS, T. A. (1982). Finding the observed information matrix when using the EM algorithm. *J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. B* **44** 226–233. [MR0676213](#)
- [22] MA, W.-Q., GENG, Z. and HU, Y.-H. (2003). Identification of graphical models for nonignorable non-response of binary outcomes in longitudinal studies. *J. Multivariate Anal.* **87** 24–45. [MR2007260](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/S0047-259X\(03\)00043-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0047-259X(03)00043-5)
- [23] MIAO, W., DING, P. and GENG, Z. (2016). Identifiability of normal and normal mixture models with nonignorable missing data. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **111** 1673–1683. [MR3601726](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2015.1105808>
- [24] MOLENBERGHS, G., BEUNCKENS, C., SOTTO, C. and KENWARD, M. G. (2008). Every missingness not at random model has a missingness at random counterpart with equal fit. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. B. Stat. Methodol.* **70** 371–388. [MR2424758](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9868.2007.00640.x>
- [25] MORIKAWA, K., KIM, J. K. and KANO, Y. (2017). Semiparametric maximum likelihood estimation with data missing not at random. *Canad. J. Statist.* **45** 393–409. [MR3729977](#) <https://doi.org/10.1002/cjs.11340>
- [26] QIN, J., LEUNG, D. and SHAO, J. (2002). Estimation with survey data under nonignorable nonresponse or informative sampling. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **97** 193–200. [MR1947279](#) <https://doi.org/10.1198/016214502753479338>
- [27] RIDDLES, M. K., KIM, J. K. and IM, J. (2016). Propensity-score-adjustment method for nonignorable nonresponse. *J. Surv. Stat. Methodol.* **97** 215–245.
- [28] ROBINS, J. M., ROTNITZKY, A. and SCHARFSTEIN, D. O. (2000). Sensitivity analysis for selection bias and unmeasured confounding in missing data and causal inference models. In *Statistical Models in Epidemiology, the Environment, and Clinical Trials (Minneapolis, MN, 1997)*. *IMA Vol. Math. Appl.* **116** 1–94. Springer, New York. [MR1731681](#) https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4612-1284-3_1
- [29] ROBINS, J. M., ROTNITZKY, A. and ZHAO, L. P. (1994). Estimation of regression coefficients when some regressors are not always observed. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **89** 846–866. [MR1294730](#)
- [30] ROTNITZKY, A. and ROBINS, J. M. (1997). Analysis of semi-parametric regression models with non-ignorable non-response. *Stat. Med.* **16** 81–102.
- [31] ROTNITZKY, A., SCHARFSTEIN, D., SU, T.-L. and ROBINS, J. (2001). Methods for conducting sensitivity analysis of trials with potentially nonignorable competing causes of censoring. *Biometrics* **57** 103–113. [MR1833295](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.0006-341X.2001.00103.x>
- [32] RUBIN, D. B. (1976). Inference and missing data. *Biometrika* **63** 581–592. [MR0455196](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/63.3.581>
- [33] SCHARFSTEIN, D. O., ROTNITZKY, A. and ROBINS, J. M. (1999). Adjusting for nonignorable drop-out using semiparametric nonresponse models. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **94** 1096–1146. [MR1731478](#) <https://doi.org/10.2307/2669923>
- [34] SEN, A. and SEN, B. (2014). Testing independence and goodness-of-fit in linear models. *Biometrika* **101** 927–942. [MR3286926](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asu026>
- [35] SHAO, J. and WANG, L. (2016). Semiparametric inverse propensity weighting for nonignorable missing data. *Biometrika* **103** 175–187. [MR3465829](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/asv071>
- [36] SKRONDAL, A. and RABE-HESKETH, S. (2014). Protective estimation of mixed-effects logistic regression when data are not missing at random. *Biometrika* **101** 175–188. [MR3180664](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/ast054>

- [37] SVERCHKOV, M. (2014). A new approach to estimation of response probabilities when missing data are not missing at random. In *Proc. Survey Res. Meth. Sect., Am. Statist. Ass.* 867–874. Amer. Statist. Assoc., Alexandria, VA.
- [38] TANG, G., LITTLE, R. J. A. and RAGHUNATHAN, T. E. (2003). Analysis of multivariate missing data with nonignorable nonresponse. *Biometrika* **90** 747–764. [MR2024755](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/90.4.747>
- [39] TANG, N., ZHAO, P. and ZHU, H. (2014). Empirical likelihood for estimating equations with nonignorably missing data. *Statist. Sinica* **24** 723–747. [MR3235396](#)
- [40] TERAN HIDALGO, S. J., WU, M. C., ENGEL, S. M. and KOSOROK, M. R. (2018). Goodness-of-fit test for nonparametric regression models: Smoothing spline ANOVA models as example. *Comput. Statist. Data Anal.* **122** 135–155. [MR3765820](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.csda.2018.01.004>
- [41] TSIATIS, A. A. (2006). *Semiparametric Theory and Missing Data. Springer Series in Statistics.* Springer, New York. [MR2233926](#)
- [42] VERBEKE, G., MOLENBERGHS, G., THIJS, H., LESAFFRE, E. and KENWARD, M. G. (2001). Sensitivity analysis for nonrandom dropout: A local influence approach. *Biometrics* **57** 7–14. [MR1833286](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.0006-341X.2001.00007.x>
- [43] WANG, S., SHAO, J. and KIM, J. K. (2014). An instrumental variable approach for identification and estimation with nonignorable nonresponse. *Statist. Sinica* **24** 1097–1116. [MR3241279](#)
- [44] ZHAO, J. and SHAO, J. (2015). Semiparametric pseudo-likelihoods in generalized linear models with non-ignorable missing data. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* **110** 1577–1590. [MR3449056](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2014.983234>
- [45] ZHAO, P., TANG, N., QU, A. and JIANG, D. (2017). Semiparametric estimating equations inference with nonignorable missing data. *Statist. Sinica* **27** 89–113. [MR3618161](#)

TWO-LEVEL PARALLEL FLATS DESIGNS

BY CHUNYAN WANG^{1,??} AND ROBERT W. MEE^{2,??}

¹*School of Statistics and Data Science, LPMC & KLMDASR, Nankai University, ??2120150092@mail.nankai.edu.cn*

²*Department of Business Analytics and Statistics, University of Tennessee, ??rmee@utk.edu*

Regular 2^{n-p} designs are also known as single flat designs. Parallel flats designs (PFDs) consisting of three parallel flats (3-PFDs) are the most frequently utilized PFDs, due to their simple structure. Generalizing to f -PFD with $f > 3$ is more challenging. This paper aims to study the general theory for the f -PFD for any $f \geq 3$. We propose a method for obtaining the confounding frequency vectors for all nonequivalent f -PFDs, and to find the least G -aberration (or highest D-efficiency) f -PFD constructed from any single flat. PFDs are particularly useful for constructing nonregular fraction, split-plot or randomized block designs. We also characterize the quaternary code design series as PFDs. Finally, we show how designs constructed by concatenating regular fractions from different families may also have a parallel flats structure. Examples are given throughout to illustrate the results.

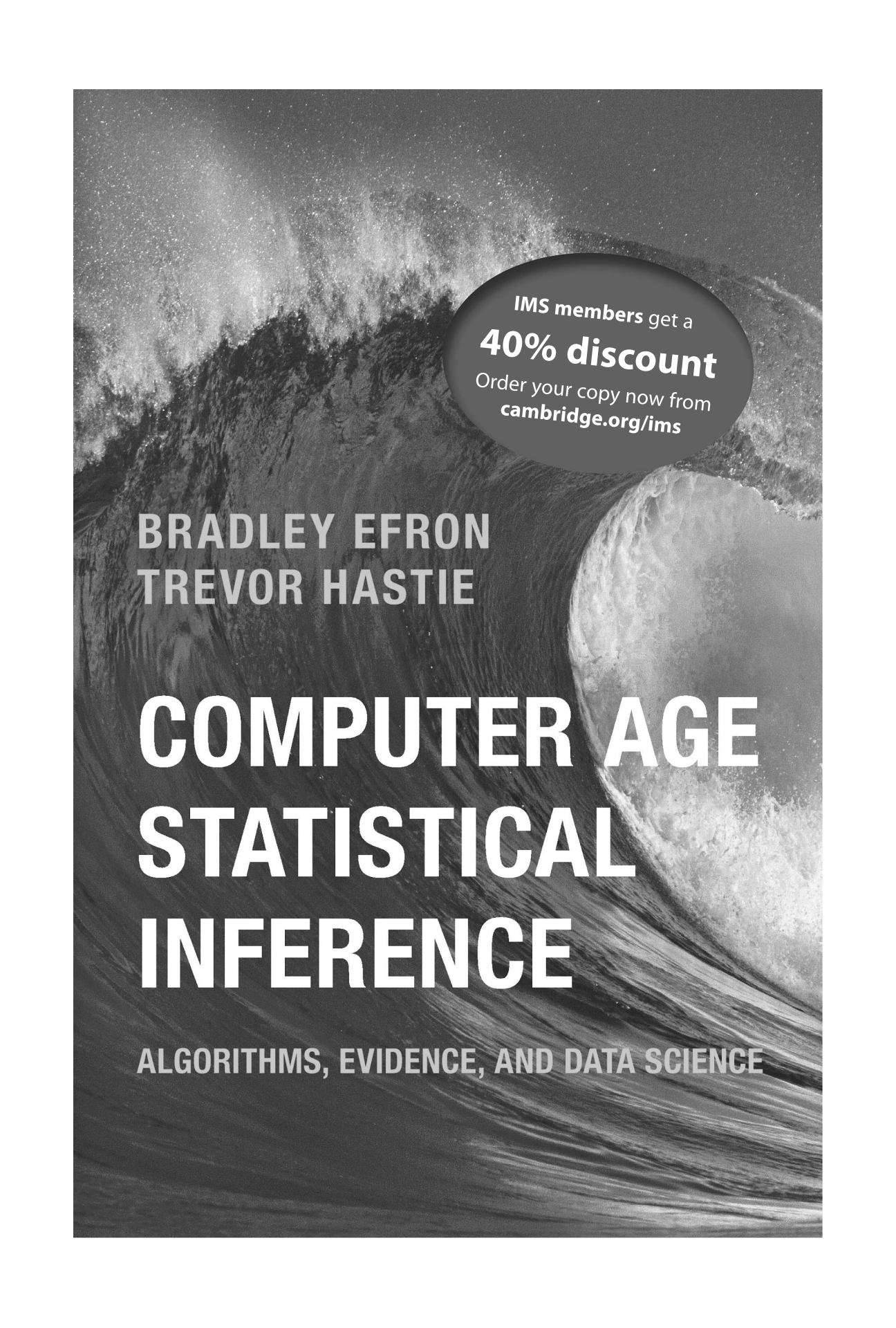
REFERENCES

- [1] ADDELMAN, S. (1961). Irregular fractions of the 2^n factorial experiments. *Technometrics* **3** 479–496. [MR0132663](#) <https://doi.org/10.2307/1266555>
- [2] ADDELMAN, S. (1964). Some two-level factorial plans with split plot confounding. *Technometrics* **6** 253–258.
- [3] BINGHAM, D. and SITTER, R. R. (1999). Minimum-aberration two-level fractional factorial split-plot designs. *Technometrics* **41** 62–70.
- [4] BLOCK, R. M. and MEE, R. W. (1999). Second order saturated resolution IV designs. *J. Stat. Theory Appl.* **2** 96–112.
- [5] BOX, G. and TYSSedal, J. (1996). Projective properties of certain orthogonal arrays. *Biometrika* **83** 950–955. [MR1440059](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/83.4.950>
- [6] BUTLER, N. A. (2003). Minimum aberration construction results for nonregular two-level fractional factorial designs. *Biometrika* **90** 891–898. [MR2024764](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/90.4.891>
- [7] CHAI, F. S. and LIAO, C. T. (2001). Three parallel flats designs for two-level factorial experiments. *Aust. N. Z. J. Stat.* **43** 113–119. [MR1837500](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/1467-842X.00159>
- [8] CHEN, J., SUN, D. X. and WU, C. F. J. (1993). A catalogue of two-level and three-level fractional factorial designs with small runs. *Int. Stat. Rev.* **61** 135–145.
- [9] CHENG, S.-W., LI, W. and YE, K. Q. (2004). Blocked nonregular two-level factorial designs. *Technometrics* **46** 269–279. [MR2082497](#) <https://doi.org/10.1198/004017004000000301>
- [10] CONNOR, W. S. and YOUNG, S. (1961). *Fractional Factorial Designs for Experiments with Factors at Two and Three Levels*. National Bureau of Standards Applied Mathematics Series **58**. National Bureau of Standards, Gaithersburg.
- [11] DENG, L.-Y. and TANG, B. (1999). Generalized resolution and minimum aberration criteria for Plackett–Burman and other nonregular factorial designs. *Statist. Sinica* **9** 1071–1082. [MR1744824](#)
- [12] EDWARDS, D. J. and MEE, R. W. (2021). Structure of nonregular two-level designs. *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.* to appear. <https://doi.org/10.1080/01621459.2021.1984927>
- [13] FRIES, A. and HUNTER, W. G. (1996). Minimum aberration 2^{k-p} designs. *Technometrics* **22** 601–608.
- [14] HEDAYAT, A. S., SLOANE, N. J. A. and STUFKEN, J. (1999). *Orthogonal Arrays*. Springer Series in Statistics. Springer, New York. Theory and applications, With a foreword by C. R. Rao. [MR1693498](#) <https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4612-1478-6>
- [15] JOHN, P. W. M. (1962). Three-quarter replicates of 2^4 and 2^5 designs. *Biometrics* **17** 319–321.

MSC2020 subject classifications. Primary 62K15; secondary 62K05.

Key words and phrases. Confounding frequency vector, equivalent design, G -aberration, nonregular fractional factorial design, quaternary code, Sylvester Hadamard matrix, two-factor interaction model.

- [16] JOHN, P. W. M. (1969). Some non-orthogonal fractions of 2^n designs. *J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. B* **31** 270–275. [MR0269041](#)
- [17] JONES, B. and GOOS, P. (2007). A candidate-set-free algorithm for generating D -optimal split-plot designs. *J. R. Stat. Soc. Ser. C. Appl. Stat.* **56** 347–364. [MR2370994](#) <https://doi.org/10.1111/j.1467-9876.2007.00581.x>
- [18] JONES, B., LEKIVETZ, R., MAJUMDAR, D., NACHTSHEIM, C. J. and STALLRICH, J. W. (2020). Construction, properties, and analysis of group-orthogonal supersaturated designs. *Technometrics* **62** 403–414. [MR4125505](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/00401706.2019.1654926>
- [19] LIAO, C. T., IYER, H. K. and VECCHIA, D. F. (1996). Construction of orthogonal two-level designs of user-specified resolution where $N \neq 2^k$. *Technometrics* **38** 342–353. [MR1422001](#) <https://doi.org/10.2307/1271305>
- [20] MEE, R. W. (2004). Efficient two-level designs for estimating all main effects and two-factor interactions. *J. Qual. Technol.* **36** 400–412.
- [21] MEE, R. W. (2009). *A Comprehensive Guide to Factorial Two-Level Experimentation*. Springer, New York.
- [22] MEE, R. W. (2013). Tips for analyzing nonregular fractional factorial experiments. *J. Qual. Technol.* **45** 330–349.
- [23] PAJAK, T. F. (1972). *Minimum Full Sequences of Two-Level Fractional Factorial Plans*. ProQuest LLC, Ann Arbor, MI. Thesis (Ph.D.)—State University of New York at Buffalo. [MR2622593](#)
- [24] PAJAK, T. F. and ADDELMAN, S. (1975). Minimum full sequences of 2^{n-m} resolution III plans. *J. Roy. Statist. Soc. Ser. B* **37** 88–95. [MR0381177](#)
- [25] PHOA, F. K. H. (2012). A code arithmetic approach for quaternary code designs and its application to $(1/64)$ th-fractions. *Ann. Statist.* **40** 3161–3175. [MR3097973](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/12-AOS1069>
- [26] PHOA, F. K. H., MUKERJEE, R. and XU, H. (2012). One-eighth- and one-sixteenth-fraction quaternary code designs with high resolution. *J. Statist. Plann. Inference* **142** 1073–1080. [MR2879752](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jspi.2011.11.012>
- [27] PHOA, F. K. H. and XU, H. (2009). Quarter-fraction factorial designs constructed via quaternary codes. *Ann. Statist.* **37** 2561–2581. [MR2543703](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/08-AOS656>
- [28] SRIVASTAVA, J. N. and CHOPRA, D. A. (1973). Balanced arrays and orthogonal arrays. In *A Survey of Combinatorial Theory* (J. N. Srivastava, ed.), Amsterdam, North-Holland.
- [29] SRIVASTAVA, J. N. and LI, J. (1996). Orthogonal designs of parallel flats type. *J. Statist. Plann. Inference* **53** 261–283. [MR1412090](#) [https://doi.org/10.1016/0378-3758\(95\)00145-X](https://doi.org/10.1016/0378-3758(95)00145-X)
- [30] TANG, B. and DENG, L.-Y. (1999). Minimum G_2 -aberration for nonregular fractional factorial designs. *Ann. Statist.* **27** 1914–1926. [MR1765622](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1017939244>
- [31] TSAI, S.-F. and LIAO, C.-T. (2018). D -optimal two-level parallel-flats block designs with partial replication. *J. Statist. Plann. Inference* **193** 89–102. [MR3713465](#) <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jspi.2017.08.004>
- [32] VAZQUEZ, A. R. and XU, H. (2019). Construction of two-level nonregular designs of strength three with large run sizes. *Technometrics* **61** 341–353. [MR3987624](#) <https://doi.org/10.1080/00401706.2018.1513381>
- [33] WANG, C. and MEE, R. W. (2021). Supplement to “Two-level parallel flats designs.” <https://doi.org/10.1214/21-AOS2071SUPP>
- [34] WOODING, W. M. (1973). The split-plot design. *J. Qual. Technol.* **5** 16–33.
- [35] XU, H. (2005). Some nonregular designs from the Nordstrom–Robinson code and their statistical properties. *Biometrika* **92** 385–397. [MR2201366](#) <https://doi.org/10.1093/biomet/92.2.385>
- [36] XU, H. and WONG, A. (2007). Two-level nonregular designs from quaternary linear codes. *Statist. Sinica* **17** 1191–1213. [MR2397390](#)
- [37] ZHANG, R., PHOA, F. K. H., MUKERJEE, R. and XU, H. (2011). A trigonometric approach to quaternary code designs with application to one-eighth and one-sixteenth fractions. *Ann. Statist.* **39** 931–955. [MR2816343](#) <https://doi.org/10.1214/10-AOS815>



IMS members get a
40% discount

Order your copy now from
cambridge.org/ims

BRADLEY EFRON
TREVOR HASTIE

COMPUTER AGE STATISTICAL INFERENCE

ALGORITHMS, EVIDENCE, AND DATA SCIENCE